



NATIONAL OPEN UNIVERSITY OF NIGERIA

**DEPARTMENT OF PEACE STUDIES AND CONFLICT
RESOLUTION, FACULTY OF SOCIAL SCIENCES**

COURSE CODE: PCR271

COURSE TITLE:

UNDERSTANDING CONFLICT AND WAR



PCR271
UNDERSTANDING CONFLICT AND WAR

© National Open University of Nigeria- January, 2022

Course Writer Oyedolapo Babatunde Durojaye

Course Editor Prof. Remi Anifowose

Head of Department Iroye Samuel Opeyemi PhD
(Associate Professor of Strategic Studies and Conflict Resolution)
 Department of Peace Studies, Faculty of Social Sciences,
 National Open University of Nigeria, Abuja

Course Reviewer Dr. Adedoyin Adedayo
Michael Okpara University, Umudikwe.



NATIONAL OPEN UNIVERSITY OF NIGERIA

National Open University of Nigeria
Headquarters
91 Cadastral Zone,
Nnamdi Azikiwe Expressway,
Jabi, Abuja

National Open University of Nigeria 2013
First Printed 2013
ISBN: 978-058-471-4

All Rights Reserved

Reviewed: January, 2022

© National Open University of Nigeria- January, 2022

CONTENTS	PAGE
Introduction	1
Course Aims	1
Course Objectives	1
Working Through This Course	2
Course Materials	2
Study Units.....	2
Assessment	6
Tutor-Marked Assignments (TMA).....	6
Final Examination and Grading	6
Course Marking Scheme	7
Presentation Schedule	7
Course Overview	7
How to Get the Most from this Course	8
Facilitators/Tutors and Tutorials	10
Summary	11

Introduction

Welcome to PCR 271 UNDERSTANDING CONFLICT AND WAR. This course is a three-credit unit course for undergraduate students in the Department of Peace Studies and Conflict Resolution, Faculty of Social Sciences. The materials were developed based on a Nigerian world of view. Its Course Guide gives an overview of the subject and as well provides you information on the organization and requirements for this course.

Course Aims

The course aim helps you to understand the Meaning/Definition of Conflict, Types of Conflict, Causes/Sources of Conflict, Conflict Theories, Conflict Analysis/Mapping, Definition of War, Causes of War, Types of War, Theories of War, Effects of War, Origin of International Law, International Law and War, Criticisms of International Law, War Crime and War Guilt, United Nations and War, International Interventions and Humanitarian Law, Prisoners of War and War Victims, Human-Rights, Peace and Development, Methods of ameliorating, if not preventing violent conflicts.

Its broad aims are achieved by:

- (i) Introducing you to the meaning of Conflict, causes, types theories, impact of Conflict and as well conflict analysis/mapping,
- (ii) Broadening your knowledge on the meaning of war, causes, theories, and effect of war.
- (iii) Explaining the positions of the international bodies law on war, peace, methods of conflict/war and development.

Course Objectives

To achieve the aims set out above, PCR 271 has overall objectives. In addition, each unit has specific objectives. The unit objectives are at the beginning of the units. I advise you to read the objectives before you start working through the each unit. This is because you may need to refer to those objectives during your study in order to know your progress). The wider objectives of the course as a whole are here. Please, take cognizance of the objectives whether you have met the aim of the course. On successful completion of the course, you should be able to:

- a) Define the meaning of conflict and discuss it,
- b) Explain conflict types and causes/sources,
- c) List the attributes of conflict theories,
- d) Explain conflict analysis/mapping,

- e) Define war, identify causes of war and types of war,
- f) Differentiate between theories of war,
- g) Be able to enumerate consequences of war,
- h) Origin of state, law and international law/interventions,
- i) Know the position international law on war prosecution,
- j) Highlight criticisms of international law,
- k) Differentiate between various forms of war crime and war guilty,
- l) Discuss shortcomings of international criminal law,
- m) Discuss peaceful means of management of conflict and war;
- n) Have a broad understanding of conflict, war, and peace.

Working through this Course

To complete the study, you are required to read the units of the course and other relevant materials. You should as well undertake practical exercises in which you need a pen, a note – book, or other materials that are listed in the course guide. The exercises are to aid your understanding of concepts presented to you. At the end of each unit, you are required to submit written assignments for your assessment purposes, and in its conclusion, you are expected to write a final examination on this course.

Course Materials

The major materials you will need for this course are:

- (i) Course guide.
- (ii) Study units.
- (iii) Assignments file.
- (iv) Relevant textbooks including the ones listed under each unit
- (v) As a beginner, you need to read newspapers and interact with other mass media and internet as often as possible.

Study Units

There are 20 units (of four modules) in this course. They are listed below:

Module 1 Understanding Conflict

- Unit 1 Meaning/Definition of Conflict, Causes, and Types
- Unit 2 Conflict Theories (Sociological/ Psychological Perspectives)
- Unit 3 Dynamics and Impact of Conflict
- Unit 4 Violent Conflict/Violence
- Unit 5 Conflict Analysis

Module 2 Understanding War

- Unit 1 Meaning/Definition of War/ Hostility, Causes of War and Types of War
- Unit 2 Theories of War
- Unit 3 Contemporary and Traditional African War
- Unit 4 Displacement of Persons: Refugees/Internally Displaced Persons in War Situations
- Unit 5 Impacts of War on Local Community

Module 3 Law of War and Armed Conflict

- Unit 1 Origin of State and Law
- Unit 2 Conceptualisation of Human/Social Security
- Unit 3 International Humanitarian Law on Armed Conflict
- Unit 4 War Crime and War Guilty
- Unit 5 Impact of War on International Community

Module 4 Management of Conflict and Resolution of War

- Unit 1 Conventional Conflict Handling Style/ African Traditional Method of Conflict Management
- Unit 2 Alternative to Dispute Resolution
- Unit 3 Conflict and War Intervention
- Unit 4 Multi-tracks Diplomacy in Peacebuilding
- Unit 5 Peace and Development

Textbooks and References

Certain books recommended in the course are listed below. You may wish to purchase them for further reading.

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp1-560.
- Akehurst M. (1982). *A Modern Introduction to International Law*. (2nd ed.) London: George Allen and Unwin Ltd.
-(1989 (b)). *The Research Act: A Theoretical Introduction to*
- Abu-Lughod, I. (1970) (ed.) *The Arab-Israel Confrontation of June 1967: Arab Perspective* Evanston, Northwest: University Press.
- Azar, Edward (1990). *The Management of Protracted Social Conflict:*
- Blic, H. (1970). *Sovereignty, Aggression and Neutrality;* Almquist and Wksell Stockholm, the Daq Hammarskjold Foundation.

- Bowett, D. W. (1958). *Self-defence in International Law*. Manchester
- Brownlie, I. (1983). *International Law and Use of Force by State*. (ed)
Oxford: Oxford Clarendon Press.
- Burton, John (1990 (a)). *Conflict: Human Needs Theory*. London:
- Burton, John (1990 (b)). *Conflict: Resolution and Prevention*. London:
- Cassès, A. (1968). *International Law in a Divided World*. Oxford:
- Cohen, Percy S. (1968) *Modern Social Theory*. London Heinemann.
- Copson, Raymond (1994). *Africa's War and Prospects for Peace*.
- Coser, Lewis; *The Functions of Social Conflict*. New York: Free Press.
- Deng, Francis ., and I. William Zatman, eds. (1991) *Conflict Resolution in Africa*. Washington: The Brooking Institution.
- Churchill, R. R. and Lowe, A. V. (1988). *The Law of the Sea*;
Manchester: University Press.
Clarendon Press.
- Denzin, N. (1989 (a)). *Interpretive Interactionism*. Newbury Park, C. A.
- Dixon, Chapter 11: 'The Use of Force', pp. 301 – 04.
- Folger, J. P. (1997). *Working Through Conflict: Strategies*
for Relationships. New York.
- Fisher, Simon, et al. (2000). *Working With Conflict: Skills and Force*. London: Council on Foreign Relations Press.
- Glahn, G. V. (1976). *Law Among Nations: An Introduction to Public International Law*. (3rd ed.) New York: Macmillan Publishing Co.Inc.
- Goevel, Jr. J. (1971). *The Struggle for the Falkland Islands: A Study in*
Grundy, Kenneth (1971). *Guerrilla Struggle in Africa: An Analysis and*
- Gurr, Ted R. (1970). *Why Men Rebel*. Princeton University Press.
- Hans Morgenthau, (1960). *Politics Among Nations: The Struggle for Power and Peace*. New York.
- Henken, L. (1989). *Right V. Might: International Law and the Use of Force*, Chapter 16: 'The Use of Force', pp. 432 – 37.
- Kalshoven, F. (1971). *Belligerent Reprisals*. London, A. W. Sijthoff.
Legal Diplomatic History. London: Kennikat Press.
- Lloyd, D. (1987). *The Idea of Law*. London: Penguin Books. Macmillan.
Macmillan.
- Mitchell, Chris (1988). *The Structure of International Conflict*. London,
Prentice-Hall.
- Sociological Methods*. Third Edition. Englewood Cliffs, N. J:
University Press.

- Otite, Onigu and Albert, Isaac A. (1999). *Community Conflict in Nigeria*. Ibadan: Spectrum, Academic Associates Peace Works. Preview. New York: Grossman.
- S. Stadman, "Conflict and Conflict Resolution in Africa: A Conceptual Framework", in D Deng and I Zartman, *Op. Cit* p 369.
- Theory and Cases*. Worcester: Dartmouth.
- Y. Diallo, (1986), *African Traditions and Humanitarian Law: Similarities and Differences*, ICRC.
- Yates, A. (1962). *Frustration and Conflict*. London: Methuen.

Assessment

An assessment file and a marking scheme will be made available to you. In the assessment file, you will find details of the works you must submit to your tutor for marking. There are two aspects of the assessment of this course; the tutor marked assignment (TMA) and the written examination. The marks you obtain in these two areas will make up your final marks. The assignment must be submitted to your tutor for formal assessment in accordance with the deadline stated in the presentation schedule and the Assignment file. The work you submit to your tutor for assessment will count for 30% of your total score.

Tutor Marked Assignments (TMAs)

You will have to submit a specified number of the Tutor Marked Assignments (TMAs). Every unit in this course has a tutor marked assignment. You will be assessed on four of them but the best three performances from the Tutor Marked Assignments (TMAs) will be used for your 30% grading. When you have completed each assignment, send it together with a Tutor Marked Assignment form, to your tutor. Make sure each assignment reaches your tutor on or before the deadline for submissions. If for any reason, you cannot complete your work on time, contact your tutor for a discussion on the possibility of an extension. Extensions will not be granted after the due date unless in exceptional circumstances.

Final Examination and Grading

The final examination will be a test of three hours. All areas of the course will be examined. Find time to read the unit all over before your examination. The final examination will attract 70% of the total course grade. The examination will consist of questions, which reflects the kinds of self assessment exercises and tutor marked assignment you have previously encountered. All aspects of the course will be assessed. You should use the time between completing the last unit, and taking the examination to revise the entire course.

Course Marking Scheme

The following table lays out how the actual course mark allocation is broken down.

Assessment	Marks
Assignments (Best Three Assignments out of Four marked)	= 30%
Final Examination	= 70%
Total	100%

Presentation Schedule

The dates for submission of all assignments will be communicated to you. You will also be told the date of completing the study units and dates for examinations.

Course Overview

Modules and Units	Title of Work	Weeks Activity	Assignments
	Course Guide		
Module 1	Understanding Conflict		
1	Meaning/Definition of Conflict, Causes and Types of Conflict	Week 1	Assignment 1
2	Conflict Theories (Sociological/Psychological Perspectives)	Week 2	Assignment 2
3	Dynamics and Impacts of Conflict	Week 3	Assignment 3
4	Violent Conflict/Violence	Week 4	Assignment 4
	Conflict Analysis	Week 5	Assignment 5
Module 2	Understanding War		
1	Meaning/Definition of War/Hostility, Causes and Types of War	Week 6	Assignment 1
2	Theories of War	Week 7	Assignment 2
3	Contemporary and Traditional African War	Week 8	Assignment 3
4	Displacement of Persons: Refugees/Internally Displaced Persons in War Situations	Week 9	Assignment 4
5	Impact of War on Local Community	Week 10	Assignment 5
Module 3	Laws of war and Armed Conflict		
1	Origin of State and Law	Week 11	Assignment 1
2	Conceptualization of Security:	Week 12	Assignment 2

	Traditional and Human/Social Security		
3	International Humanitarian Law and Armed Conflict	Week 13	Assignment 3
4	War crime and War guilty	Week 14	Assignment 4
5	Impact of War on International Community	Week 15	Assignment 5
Module 4 Management/Resolution of Conflict and War			
1	Conventional Conflict Handling Style/African Traditional Methods of Conflict Management	Week 16	Assignment 1
2	Alternative to Dispute Resolution	Week 17	Assignment 2
3	Conflict and War Interventions	Week 18	Assignment 3
4	Multi-tract Diplomacy in Peacebuilding	Week 19	Assignment 4
5	Peace and Development	Week 20	Assignment 5

How to Get the Best from this Course

In distance learning, the study units replace the university lecture. This is one of the great advantages of distance learning; you can read and work through specially designed study materials at your own pace, and at a time and place that suits you best. Think of it as reading the lecture instead of listening to the lecturer. In the same way a lecturer might give you some reading to do, the study units tell you where to read, and which are your text materials or set books. You are provided exercises to do at appropriate points, just as a lecturer might give you an in-class exercise. Each of the study units follows a common format. The first item is an introduction to the subject matter of the unit, and how a particular unit is integrated with the other units and the course as a whole. Next to this is a set of learning objectives. These objectives let you know what you should do by the time you have completed the units. These learning objectives are meant to guide your study.

The moment a unit is finished, you must go back and check whether you have achieved the objectives. If this is made a habit, then you will significantly improve your chances of passing the course. The main body of the unit guides you through the required reading from other sources. This will usually be either from your set books or from a Reading section. The following is a practical strategy for working through the course. If you run into any trouble, telephone your tutor. Remember that your tutor's job is to help you. When you need assistance, do not hesitate to call and ask your tutor to provide it.

1. Read this Course Guide thoroughly, it is your first assignment.
2. Organize a Study Schedule. Design a 'Course Overview' to guide you through the Course. Note the time you are expected to spend on each unit and how the Assignments relate to the units. Whatever method you choose to use, you should decide on and write in your own dates and schedule of work for each unit.
3. Once you have created your own study schedule, do everything to stay faithful to it. The major reason why students fail is that they get behind with their course work. If you get into difficulties with your schedule, please, let your tutor know before it is too late to help.
4. Turn to Unit I, and read the introduction and the objectives for the unit.
5. Assemble the study materials. You will need your set books and the unit you are studying at any point in time. As you work through the unit, you will know what sources to consult for further information.
6. Keep in touch with your study centre. Up-to-date course information will be continuously available there.
7. Well before the relevant due dates (about 4 weeks before due dates), keep in mind that you will learn a lot by doing the assignment carefully. They have been designed to help you meet the objectives of the course and, therefore, will help you pass the examination. Submit all assignments not later than the due date.
8. Review the objectives for each study unit to confirm that you have achieved them. If you feel unsure about any of the objectives, review the study materials or consult your tutor.

9. When you are confident that you have achieved a unit's objectives, you can start on the next unit. Proceed unit by unit through the course and try to pace your study so that you keep yourself on schedule.
10. When you have submitted an assignment to your tutor for marking, do not wait for its return before starting on the next unit. Keep to your schedule. When the assignment is returned, pay particular attention to your tutor's comments, both on the tutor-marked assignment form and also the written comments on the ordinary assignments.
11. After completing the last unit, review the course and prepare yourself for the final examination. Check that you have achieved the unit objectives (listed at the beginning of each unit) and the course objectives (listed in the Courses Guide).

Facilitators/Tutors and Tutorials

Information relating to the tutorials will be provided at the appropriate time. Your tutorial facilitator will mark and comment on your assignments, keep a close watch on your progress and on any difficulties you might encounter and provide assistance to you during the course. You must take your tutor-marked assignments to the study centre well before the due date (at least two working days are required). They will be marked by your tutor and returned to you as soon as possible.

Do not hesitate to contact your tutorial facilitator if you need help. Contact your tutor if:

- You do not understand any part of the study units or the assigned readings
- You have difficulty with the exercises
- You have a question or problem with an assignment or with your tutor's comments on an assignment or with the grading of an assignment.

You should try your best to attend the tutorials. This is the only chance to have face-to-face contact with your tutor and ask questions which are answered instantly. You can raise any problem encountered in the course of your study. To gain the maximum benefit from course tutorials, prepare a question list before attending them. You will learn a lot from participating in discussion actively.

Summary

The course guide gives you an overview of what to expect in the course of this study. The course teaches you the basic principles of the meaning, causes, and types of conflict/war and international law and conflict/war. It also acquaints you with how conflict or war could be resolved amicably and forcefully respectively.

We wish you success with the course and hope that you will find it both interesting and useful.



Course Reviewer Dr. Adedoyin Adedayo
Michael Okpara University, Umudikwe.

National Open University of Nigeria
Headquarters
14/16 Ahmadu Bello Way
Victoria Island
Lagos

Abuja Office
No. 5 Dar es Salam Street
Off Aminu Kano Crescent
Wuse II, Abuja
Nigeria

e-mail: centralinfo@nou.edu.ng
URL: www.nou.edu.ng

Published by:
National Open University of Nigeria

First Printed 2010

ISBN: 978-058-471-4

All Rights Reserved

Reviewed: January, 2022

CONTENTS	PAGE
Module 1	Understanding Conflict.....1
Unit 1	Meaning/Definition of Conflict, Causes, and Types.....1
Unit 2	Conflict Theories (Sociological/ Psychological Perspectives).....12
Unit 3	Dynamics and Impact of Conflict.....34
Unit 4	Violent Conflict or Violence.....45
Unit 5	Conflict Analysis.....58
Module 2	Understanding War.....74
Unit 1	Meaning/Definition of War/ Hostility, Causes of War and Types of War.....74
Unit 2	Theories of War.....84
Unit 3	Contemporary and Traditional African War.....84
Unit 4	Displacement of Persons: Refugees/Internally Displaced Persons in War Situations100
Unit 5	Impacts of War on Society.....115
Module 3	Law of War and Armed Conflict.....130
Unit 1	Origin of State and Law.....130
Unit 2	Conceptualisation of Human/Social Security..... 149
Unit 3	International Humanitarian Law on Armed Conflict..... 165
Unit 4	War Crime and War Guilty..... 175
Unit 5	Impact of War on International Community..... 186
Module 4	Management/Resolution of Conflict and War.....201
Unit 1	Conventional Conflict Handling Style/ African Traditional Method of Conflict Management.....201
Unit 2	Alternative to Dispute Resolution.....212
Unit 3	Conflict and War Intervention.....223
Unit 4	Multi-tracks Diplomacy in Peacebuilding.....239
Unit 5	Peace and Development.....250

MODULE 1 UNDERSTANDING CONFLICT

Unit 1 Meaning/Definition of Conflict, Causes, and Types
Unit 2 Conflict Theories (Sociological/ Psychological Perspectives)
Unit 3 Dynamics and Impact of Conflict
Unit 4 Violent Conflict or Violence
Unit 5 Conflict Analysis

**UNIT 1 MEANING/DEFINITION OF CONFLICT, CAUSES,
AND TYPES OF CONFLICT****CONTENTS**

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Definitions of Conflict as a Concept/Background to Study
 - 3.2 Causes of Conflict
 - 3.3 Types of Conflict
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The word conflict was etymologically derived from a Latin word calls “*confligere*”- meaning, to clash or engage in a struggle or battle over perceived incompatible goals, things, or values. It exists in all spheres human life since the time immemorial. It is a state of human or other living organisms’ interaction over perceived certain needs that may improve or mar their established relationship. Conflict is an “integral and ephemeral” part of human occurring when parties involved compete over certain goals, values, or interests. Conflict does not limit itself to a local or particular environment, and very multi-facial in nature. It could emanate from different angles, although, its naturalness or functionality may not be ascertained or well understood without referring to its violent. It is a universal phenomenon that occurs at anytime in anywhere. Whenever it is amicably managed or handled, it improves and brings mutual understanding for those who are involved (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, you should be able to:

- identify the origin of the word conflict
- define conflict in your own words
- discuss causes of conflict
- explain types of conflict

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Definitions of Conflict

Conflict is a struggle over values or claims to status, power, and scarce resources, in which the aim of groups or individuals involved is not only to obtain the desired values but to neutralise, injure or remove rivals (Coser, 1956:8).

Webster Dictionary (1971) conflict means “to strike, clash, fight, struggle or battle, clash, contend, confront, or have a controversy, quarrel, opposition, strife or incompatibility, or be at variance”.

Wright (1990:19) defines conflict as opposition among social entities directed against one another.

Maoz (1982:1) defines conflict as a stage of incompatibility among values, where the achievement of one value can be realised only at the expense of some other values. It arises within a single organism pursuing multiple goals as well as between or among organisms striving at incompatible goals.

Kriesberg (1988:2) states that a social conflict exists when two or more persons or groups manifest the belief that they have incompatible objectives.

Albert (2001:3) defines conflict as a critical mechanism through which goals and aspirations of individuals or groups of individuals are articulated.

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) conflict is an interaction that aims at “beating”, overcoming, or defeating opponents over certain things. It is an “integral and ephemeral” part of human occurring when the parties involved compete over certain goals, values, or interests.

In other words, conflict is a contradiction arising from differences in interests, ideas, ideologies, orientations, beliefs, perceptions, and tendencies. The contradiction exists at all levels of society – intra – psychic/personal, interpersonal, intra – groups, inter – group, institution, intra – national and international. All the definitions above revealed the conflict as an inevitable, unavoidable or a pure natural phenomenon that is as old as human being. It is a universal phenomenon that occurs at anytime in different places. Whenever it is amicably managed or handled, it improves and brings mutual understanding for those who are involved. It is a “good” natural phenomenon or ‘syndrome’ at times. It emanates from different angles, but, its naturality or functionality may not be ascertained or well understood without referring to its violent. Conflict types, causes, manifestations, escalation and de-escalation processes are in phases.

However, conflict has always been ignorantly seen or perceived by people as negative phenomenon that must be avoided or ignored at all costs, which is a typical wrong perception or notion. In Chinese language for example, conflict is “an opportunity or a chance for change as well as a risk of danger. The Chinese believe that conflict is neither positive nor negative, but its responses determine its outcomes. Conflict can bring progress, mutual understanding and development if it is properly managed or well handled, either constructively or positively (Adedoyin, 2006 and 2015).

Stagner defines conflict as ...“a situation in which two or more human beings desire goals which they perceived as being obtainable by one or the other, but not both... each party is mobilizing energy to obtain a goal, a desired object or situation, and each party perceives the other as a barrier or treat to that goal”. Rose therefore saw nothing wrong in conflict, he saw it as a natural and inevitable human experience and as a critical mechanism by which goals and aspirations of individual and groups are articulated, it is a channel for the definition of creative solutions to human problems and a means to the development of a collective identity. What Ross is to infer is that without conflict we cannot have change? Similarly, Laue (1990:256 -7) tries to disabuse our minds about the dysfunctional perception of conflict. He notes that: “Conflict is not deviant, pathological, or sick behaviour per-se. It is not the opposite of order..... There is orderliness in conflict, although conflict can become disorderly. And it can be a very helpful and useful part of society”. What to be feared is destructive conflicts (that is, conflict that have started producing negative results) rather than conflict itself. Action Aid (1994) and Howik and Meijer (1994) see conflict as “incompatible behaviour between parties whose interests are or appear to be, incompatible or clashing”.

Two things could be taken from these simple definitions. The first is that conflict emanates from (social) relationships. The conflicting group must groups must reside in close proximity whether physically or psychologically. Indeed, conflict and competition are two points of a continuum in which conflict represents the aggravated one. Conflict arises when disagreement emerges from the competition cannot be managed. In the other hand, according to Wright, conflicts are in processes that can degenerate into violence, and if not handled well, to a full blown war. It takes a variety of form and classifies basis on intensity or scale of violence, structure, and character of the parties involved. The class, ethnic, groups, religious group, and racial conflicts manifest a distinct spatial character in national, regional, inter-state, or international level. Every non-violent conflict has potential to become violent if its regulatory mechanism is ineffective.

Wright (1990) also opines that, war is a species of conflict, that is, understanding conflict would give a probable characteristic of war in different conditions such as methods of regulation, prevention, and winning the wars”. He gives two reasons in the ways the war could be understood, that is, in the legal point of view where war was considered to handle a conflict situation by armed force. But from the sociological perspective, war is viewed as a conflict among political groups. Ross (1993 6:xiv) notes that: “If disadvantaged groups and individuals refuse to consider open conflict, they deny themselves what sometimes is their most effective means of bringing about the needed change”.

3.2 Causes of Conflict

As earlier mentioned, conflict is inevitable and it keeps occurring in day to day individual life, either at home, at work, at social outings, even when we sleep in our bedroom without interacting with anyone. Although, we are familiar with those inexhaustible things that cause conflicts, but in this context, the major factors responsible for conflict are injustice, resources, values and cultural diversities, psychological needs and information management, which are discussed in this section. They are propelling factors of conflict manifestation in every social enclave (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2.1 Injustice

Injustice is the first responsible factor of conflict. It supersedes any other causative factors of conflict, because, it is not in human nature to allow other persons or colleagues to cheat or deny one opportunity of having access to perceived needs, be it resources, psychological needs, information management, cultural values or belief systems.

3.2.2 Resources

Since human needs are insatiable and improper management of resources or inadequate availability of resources hinders achievement of certain goals, competitions over available resources would lead to conflict. The conflict over resources can easily be identified and managed than any other conflicts generated by other factors. Such conflict occurs when two or more parties' need such as economic interest, political power, value and other needs are incompatible. The competition may assume negative or destructive dimension when the available resources is not evenly or judiciously distributed. The relatively deprived would always struggle to improve their lot. This view synchronizes the Marxian theory of conflict, which posits that the more the rate of unequal distribution of scarce resources in the society, the greater is the basic conflict of interest between its dominant and subordinate segments. Let us also says that when practices of dominant segment create "alienation dispositions" the more the subordinate segments of a system become aware of their collective interest interests and question the distribution of scarce resources, the more likely they are to join in overt conflict against dominant segment of a system.

3.2.3 Psychological Needs

This has to do with people's behaviour or attitudinal condition, which may not be seen physically or cannot manifest physically on time. It affects the psyche of the victims, and hinders their productivity capacity. For example, denying of a person care, love, security of life, belongingness, or friendship can result into aggression or threat of life, due to its psychological or trauma effect. Conflicts over psychological needs of groups or individuals are cannot be seen but affecting the psyche of individuals and groups self-actualization, need for respect, projection of one's group better than others. Referencing Maslow's theory, once an individual psychological need is achieved or satisfied, such individual would be dominated by a drive for other unsatisfied needs through a process calls "Fulfillment Progression".

3.2.4 Cultural Diversity and Values

This is another vital factor responsible for conflict. The values and cultural diversity conflict could hardly be managed easily. They are often philosophical or ideological in nature. They could hardly be trade-off by people, and some people are even ready to die because of their values. They see value such as religion as something that links them to their creator, which must not be tampered or trampled upon by anybody, because, it depicts or reflects their life.

The values or cultural diversity of a society represent its identities and ideological endowments, which can hardly be parted way with, because, denies of culture is the denied of human nature or social life. Contradicting value systems such as religious beliefs, ideological positions, and general worldview is another factor responsible for social conflict among the parties involved. The conflict involves values is the most difficult one to understand and manage because most times people are ready to die for what they believe. According to Weaver, who likens culture to an iceberg, he says “internal culture”, is implicitly learned and difficult to change. That is part of culture that is below the waterline in the iceberg analogy. It includes some of our beliefs, our values and thought patterns, attitudes, non-verbal communication and perception. Beliefs are interrelated and form “belief system”, which because they are learned in life, are difficult to change.

3.2.5 Information Management

Information or communication may be benevolent, malevolent, and ambivalent in nature. In other words, proper management of information is very crucial and important in every human relationship. Conflict occurs when necessary information is lacking, distorted, or mismanaged -in term of manipulation, propaganda or communication gaps. Information though intangible, is a crucial integral part of human. That is, proper management of information is very vital to avoid any manifestation of conflict. Mismanagement of information can destroy entire human race. It is a crucial weapon of war, but could also help to prevent war and achieve or maintain peaceful co-existence. The pivotal role of information in societal conflict cannot be over-emphasised, they can either be manipulative or constructive. Especially in a widespread conflicting situation, the role of information becomes more crucial, difficult, and dangerous. When the information system in a society is tampered with there will be a conflict. The information system can be tampered with in different ways. In contemporary societies, quantity and quality of information vary dramatically and are dependent on wide range of factors, such as level of literacy for social cohesiveness and stability based on available information technology. Meaning, central to the availability and quality of public information is the media (print, audio and audio-visual). In human societies, media shapes the opinions and decisions of people to a conflict or a potential conflict, where social, political and economic conflict degenerated into widespread violence. The role of information in mitigating the effects of violence, or in presenting means of management is crucial.

3.2.6 Perception

This has to do with people's view, understanding, and how they interpret the situations around them. Misperception of issues could lead to individual conflict as well as groups' conflict. In other words, not everyone would see things the same way. People view or see things in different perspectives. The reflection of a person makes him or her to draw conclusion on certain thing at a particular time. In terms of perception, there are many factors that can influence the minds or actions of people. Information management, educational background, experience/exposure, religious/belief system, culture/ethnicity, gender, heredity, environment, etc. influence perceptions of people. All these factors and more directly or indirectly determine the response of people to a conflicting situation. That is, ensuring peaceful and stability environment requires tolerance and harmonisation of human perceptions.

3.3 Types of Conflict

It is important that everyone should know the types of conflict he/she is encountered in day to day activities. According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), the following types of conflict: intra-personal and inter-personals conflict, intra-group and inter-groups conflict, communal conflict, intra-state and inter-states conflict, national and international conflicts are discussed in this section.

a. Intra-Personal Conflict

Intra-personal conflict is the smallest and most occurred type of conflict. It is a conflict within a person, or refers as oneself conflict that is most difficult to handle. Intra-personal conflict is an innate and one-self conflict. It could be psychological effect or traumatic experience. Meaning, what a person is passing through at a particular period. Examples are use of time, choice of partners, making a right choice out of varieties, moral questions, goals, aspirations, etc. The ability to manage intra-personal conflict determines how successful a person would be in life. Intra-personal conflict manifests itself as hunger for food, thirsty for water, sexual urge or deprivation, frustration-aggression transfer, deny of opportunity, etc. Intra-personal conflict can lead to larger conflict if it is not well handled.

b. Inter-Personal Conflict

This is a conflict between two or among parties who are having incompatible goals or issues. It is a state of conflicting interests between or among some parties due to poor interaction. Inter-personals conflict occurs when two or more parties compete over certain goals, values, or interests. It is an interaction that aims at 'beating' or defeating opponents.

It can manifest itself as frustration-aggression transfer on other persons, social media, etc. For examples, conflicts between husband and wife, parent and children, persons and colleagues, etc. are inter-personal conflicts.

c. Intra-group Conflict

This is a conflict within a group of individuals or faction within a group. Intra-group conflict could occur within a political party when its members are agitating for different political opportunities or powers. It can also manifest itself as ethnic or religious crisis (dogmatism or fanaticism). For example, in Nigeria, conflict within the People Democratic Party (PDP) or Alliance for Democracy (AD) Party in 2003, or Odua People's Congress (OPC) factions in the South West can be referred to as intra-group conflict.

d. Inter-groups Conflict

It is a conflict between or among two or more groups over perceived incompatible goals. It is common between or among two or more groups due to incompatible values or interests, which may be due to rivalries or inter-parties' agitations, or when a group is seeing another group as a stranger or interloper. This is common among political parties, especially, where there is multi-parties system. Nigerian multi-political parties' situation is a good example.

e. Communal/Communities Conflict

This is a conflict within a community, or among the communities, or conflict within a particular geographical region due to incompatible goals. It is a state of antagonism among the ethnic races, community members, or communities where co-operation is lacking. Ideological or philosophical differences are the most common responsible or fundamental factors of communal/communities conflict within a social enclave or geographical location. In Nigeria, the conflict within or between Hausa and Yoruba or Igbo and Hausa communities, etc. are good examples.

f. State Conflict

It is a conflict within a state involving different category of people or groups. It can manifest itself as ethnic cleavage or agitation, inter-religious or economic competition, political, philosophical or ideological difference competitions, which may be due to structural problem. Political agitations among the citizens of a state or regional political power agitation among some localities are good examples.

g. Inter-states Conflict

It is a conflict between or among the two or more states of a nationality, which may be due to resource allocations or revenue sharing formulas. It can occur due to a boundary adjustment between or among the states. Or when a country's resources such as land, forest reserve, river, etc. are tampered with or trampled upon by another state.

h. National Conflict

This is a conflict within a nation involving different ethnic groups or categories of people. It can manifest as inter-ethnics or inter-religious conflicts or competitions over resources, just as it was on Nigerian's revenue allocations. It may occur as a result of state or non-state actors' agitation, and even metamorphoses into violence if it is not well handled. Examples were civil wars in Nigeria, Liberia, Sierra Leone, Burundi, Rwanda, Democratic Republic of Congo, Sudan, Ethiopia, Somalia, etc.

i. Internationals Conflict

This is a conflict between or among two or more nations. It is a cross international boundaries conflict, which may be due to ideological differences or reasoning, territorial claims, political competitions, etc. It can lead to world war at large if it is not well handled, which was brain behind the establishment of United Nations Organisation in 1948, after the Second World War.

Classification of Conflict

Ted Robert Gurr (1994), in his article "a comparative of civil strife and Quincy Wright" in his paper "the nature of conflict" argues that the level of violence rather than its absence or presence is a better criterion for classifying conflicts. Wright for example distinguishes between "Ordinary" conflict which may involve non-violence that usually at individual and group levels; and war, which is carried out by armed forces and involves violence of considerable magnitude.

Similarly, Gurr distinguishes between "turmoil" which includes both non-violence and small-scale violent conflict and rebellion or internal war. The point in the classification was that no matter their peculiarities, conflicting situations are differed to some large extent in degrees and should therefore be analysed in terms of continuum whether they are involved in violence. This would enable us pay close attention to the possible escalation or worsen scenario of conflicts. Sometimes, a simple non-violence/violent conflict classification appears to shape up. Another popular classification categorises conflict into structural and non-structural conflicts. Structural conflicts which tend to be endemic are those which are predisposed by the innate character of societal politics. This could be as a result of "unjust, repressive, and oppressive sociopolitical structure". Structural factors of conflict include inequality among the groups of people in getting access to socio-economic and political privileges or benefits such as education, income distribution, unemployment, and control of political power, as well as low levels of national integration which encourage "Zero-sum" seeking for state power.

In view of this, Wherp, in his work on “conflict resolution” opines that most conflicts in Africa are endemic by definition to the extent that predispose factors of conflict are not from political system itself. They were as a result of specific policies or actions of the state actors or groups which can hardly last long.

The third classification of conflicts was based on “character of the parties” involved and so on. For example, the ethnic and religious conflicts are most prevalent in Africa and tend to be the most important bases of identity for most individuals which attract strong loyalties to the groups involved.

4.0 CONCLUSION

In the light of the above discussions, one can deduce that conflict is inevitable in human life, but the degree or intensity of conflicts is determined by the attitudes or mode of approaches adopted by the parties involved.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, various definitions of conflict and backgrounds postulated by many scholars were critically examined. Issues such as causes and types of conflict were also discussed to facilitate proper understanding of the concept.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Critically discuss the concept of conflict from your own perspective.
2. Is conflict negative or positive to human existence?
3. Can conflict be totally eradicated? Discuss.

7.0 REFERENCE/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-560.
- Adedoyin, A. (2006). *Corruption and Violent Conflict in Nigeria*, An M.A Dissertation in Peace and Conflict Studies Programme, University of Ibadan, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Albert, I.O. (2001). *Introduction to Third-Party Intervention in Community Conflicts*; Ibadan, Peaceful Transformation Forum in Association with John Archers (Publishers) Limited.

- Ball, C. and L. Dunn (1996). *Non-Governmental Organizations: Guidelines for Good Policy and Practice*. London: The Commonwealth Foundation.
- Coser, L. 1956. *The Function of Social Conflict*. New York: Norton.
- Drukman, D. (1993). "An Analytical Research Agenda for Conflict and Conflict Resolution", in Dennis J. D.
- Samdole and Hugo Vander Marwe (eds), *Conflict Resolution Theory and Practice: Integration and Application*. Manchester and New York: Manchester University Press.
- Folger, J. P. (1997). *Working Through Conflict: Strategies for Relationships*, New York.
- Gurr, T. and Harff, B. 1994. *Ethnic Conflict in World Politics*, Boulder, Colorado: Western View Press.
- Howik, H. and Meijer, K. 1994. *Understanding Conflict*. In Deng, F and Zartman, I. (eds). 1989. *Conflict Management and Prevention*, New York city.
- Kriesberg, K. 1988. *Conflict Prevention and its Management*. In Schmid, A.P. 2000. *Thesaurus and Glossary of Early Warning Conflict Prevention Terms: Forum on Early Warning and Early Response*, London.
- Maoz, Z . 1982. *Paths to conflict International Dispute Initiation, 1816-1976*, Boulder: West View.
- Wright, Q. 1990. *The Nature of Conflict*. In John Burton and Frank Dukes (eds)", *Conflict: Readings in Management and Resolution*, Hampshire: Macmillan

UNIT 2 CONFLICT THEORIES: SOCIOLOGICAL/ PSYCHOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVES

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Sociological Perspective of Conflict Theories
 - 3.2 Psychological Perspective of Conflict Theories
 - 3.3 Assumptions of Conflict Theories
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

In this unit, the sociological/psychological perspectives of conflict theories and some studies conducted by scholars or researchers on this filed will be discussed in order to have a comprehensive understanding of various schools of thoughts and their diverse views or opinions. The rationale behind this is to enable students identify the strengths and weakness of some principles guiding the contemporary issues of social conflicts. It will as well enable students to have a clear understanding on how socio-psychology determines their individual behaviours and their inability to manage their conflict situations very well.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- categorise different theories of conflict;
- analyse various theories of conflict;
- identify and relate conflict theories to different human activities;
and
- appreciate the importance of communication management in
conflict prevention in the society.

3.1 Sociological Perspective of Conflict Theories

3.1.1 Karl Marx Theory

In this theory, Karl Marx opines that “in the course of social production of human needs, men are inevitably entered into definite agreements or relations, which are independent of their wills. Namely: relationship of production and appropriate stages in the development of production forces. Totality of the production relations directly or indirectly constitutes economic structures in societies, while their real foundation is on legal and political superstructures that corresponding social consciousness of members. The modes of production are general processes of socio-political and intellectual life”. In view of this, the parties involved in a conflict due to this situation fight over perceived incompatible goals and not material things only (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Social conflict through this medium would be as a result of greediness or grievances of either party. Bredal and Malone (2000:1) agree that social conflicts are generated by many factors which are deep-seated in age's exploitation and injustice. They are “functional utilities” embedded in economic disparities. In other words, the degree of inequality in the distribution of resources generates inherent conflicts of interest. He was of the view that contradiction in the capitalist modes of economic production creates processes for conflict situations that ushering in communism via a revolutionary action that may be carried out by proletariats (the ruled). Although, his predictions were absolutely right, perhaps, because of some logical errors in his discussions. Nevertheless, his analysis is still useful, applicable, and relevant to most conflicts experienced by individuals or groups today.

According to Karl Marx, the more the rate or degree of inequality in the distribution of the relative available resources or scarce resources in a social system, the greater is the basic conflict of interest between its dominant and subordinate segments. The more the subordinate segments (proletariat) are aware of their true collective interests, the more the likelihood of questioning the legitimacy of the existing pattern of distribution or allocation of scarce resources. The subordinates are more likely to aware of their true collective interest, once the changes carried out by the dominant segments disrupt the existing relations among the subordinates. Such practices of dominant segments are likely to “alienate their members through dispositions”; and the members of the subordinate segments would communicate their grievances to one another, and in returns, facilitated an ecological concentration of members for an expansion of educational opportunities for members.

Theory asserts that the more the subordinate segments in a social system aware of their collective interests and questioning the legitimacy of the distribution of the scarce resources, the more their likelihood to join the overt conflict against the dominant segments of the system. That is, the greater is the ideological unification of the members of the subordinate segments of such social system. Similarly, the more the development of a political leadership structure of a society is, the more the likelihood of interests and relationships between the dominant and subjugated segments of society to become polarized and irreconcilable. This means the more the polarized relations of dominants and subordinates are the more their conflicts or violent conflicts. Or the more the violent nature of the conflict is, the greater the socio-structural changes within the system and the redistribution of their scarce resources.

3.1.2 Max Weber Theory

According to Weber, conflict is highly contingent on the emergence of “Charismatic Leaders” who could mobilize subordinates. He was of the view that subordinates are more likely to pursue conflict with their super ordinates:

- a. when they withdraw legitimacy from the political authority;
- b. when the correlation among the members of a class, status, group, and political hierarchies is high;
- c. the discontinuity or degrees of inequality in the resource distribution within social hierarchies is high; and
- d. when the social mobility of social hierarchies of power, prestige, and wealth are low.

That is, conflict between super ordinates and subordinates is more likely when the charismatic leaders can mobilize resentments of subordinates. Or when the charismatic leaders are gaining in conflict, the pressure would mount to routines authority through a new system of rules and administration. Once a system of rules and administrative authority is imposed, there is more likelihood that subordinates will withdraw the legitimacy of political authority and engage in conflict with the new super ordinates, especially, when the new traditional and ascriptive political dominations are imposed by the elites.

3.1.3 Conflict Theory Model of Dahrendorf

Dahrendorf (1958) introduces productive and constructive conflict. He sees conflict as necessary thing in achieving or gaining an end in society, or, as agent of goals realization. He was of the opinion that social conflict produces change in every social system where it is necessary or good.

Dahrendorf as well determines a systematic locus and specific framework for theories of conflict in sociological perspective. He identifies two kinds of struggles in organization, which he calls: “Exogenous” and “Endogenous” conflicts. The endogenous aspect is a conflict generated within an organizational system or society. In this regard, he agrees with Marx Weber that internal conflict emerges from a certain social structure; and as well went beyond the internal dynamics of conflict that allow external factors call exogenous conflict to influence the social change. In order words, exogenous conflict is always coming into play from the outside of socio-structure. The theory asserts that certain conflicts are based on socio -structural arrangements, which hence, abound to arise once socio-structural arrangements allow them. Similarly, the dichotomy between the social roles could as well imperatively coordinated groups into either positive or negative dominance riles because of fails social structure.

Here are the assumptions on structural arrangements that could lead to conflict presented by Dahrendorf in his theory of conflict model. In any imperative coordinated group, the carriers of positive (status quo) and negative (change of status quo) dominants determine the two quasi-groups with opposite latent interest.

- The bearers of the positive and negative dominant roles could organize themselves into groups that manifest their interests except there are certain empirical variable of interventions.
- Any interest groups emerged in this manner could be in constant conflict with intention of changing the status quo.
- The conflict among the interest groups in such manner could lead to changes in socio-structure of relations through the changes in dominant relations.

The propagators of pluralist school of thought such as Hugh Clegg *el al*, had a different view about conflict. The school views conflict as a constructive dynamic that contributed toward what could be defined as healthy industrial order. They further suggested some appropriate institutions of regulations, that is, the overt and active manifestation of conflict would manage discontent, reduce tension, clarify power relation, and adjust industrial structure. Accordingly, the school identifies solidarity groups as devices and embodiments of principles of self-determination. It emerged as criticism to political doctrine of sovereignty that claims that an independent political system should be a final authority in decision making and must be supreme. Contrary to this assumption, the school believes that within a socio-political system, there must be groups that have their selves’ interests and beliefs which government must seek for their consent or input, loyalty and cooperation to survive.

Rather than existence of a definite decision by the final authorities, it contends that there must be continuous (conflicts, antagonisms) and compromises for the system to survive.

In essence, a plural social or industrial relation has to accommodate different and divergent pressure groups' views in order to protect different interests and harmonize such socio-political changes for peaceful co-existence. This is achievable through continuous negotiation, concession and compromises within or among the pressure (interest) groups and authorities. Given the requisite analysis, it is evident that effective communication is a critical tool of preventing and managing conflicts. The above discussions identify effective communication, clear conflict understanding, dialogue, negotiation, concession, and compromise as tools of conflict management in work place, institution, and society.

3.1.4 Pluralist Theory of Conflict

This theory states that cultural values, identity differences, as well as group interests influence relationship between or among individuals or groups of individual, either positively or negatively. When it is negative, it becomes a source of social conflict. From sociological perspective, cultural identity paves way for one ethnic group to be seeing as intruder or interloper that needs to be prevented from encroach the other cultural interests. While political perspective sees agitation for power or power consciousness and its advantages as sources of tension between or among individuals or groups of individual in a social system. In this sense, groups of individual sharing the same cultural identity would less engage in activities that can eliminate, neutralise or injure their members or monopolise source of resources that has high tendency of causing negative relationship among them (Maoz, 1982). Phenomenon of inferiority or superiority is often twisted their perceptions of one another and created conditions for negative interactions that my invariably produce conflict.

3.1.5 Structural – Functional Theory

Talcott Parson (1960) champions the thoughts of this theory after the World War II. According to structural-functionalist, every individual adjusts to a given social structure in an organization, institution, or society as norm. A change in a social structure of organization or institution could cause conflict and destabilize the organization if the conditions of change are not well defined. In other words, there is need for constructive handling of conflict in order to maintain social stability of individual, institution, as well as societal at large.

The theory maintains that every part of social structure has functions to play ensure stability of their society. It sees conflict as dysfunctional phenomenon or abnormal situation and diseases endemic society. It projects situation that maintains state of equilibrium and collaboration in individuals, organizations, and society.

This means the way a society is structured determines what would be obtainable, in terms of character of its superstructure such as political, legal, cultural, religious, organisations, institutions, etc. relationships, and security. In other words, conflict is inbuilt in a particular society due to the way that society is being structured and organised. The theory identifies social problems such as political and economic exclusion of one another, injustice, poverty, disease, exploitation, inequity, etc. as sources of conflict. It maintains that conflicts occur because of exploitative and unjust nature of social structure, in terms of domination of others by one class. Faleti (2004: 41) Karl Marx et al. blame bourgeoisies for exploitative system based on production relations and division of society into proletariat and capitalist class. Exploitation is the source of conflict in many societies, and capitalists are accused of the exploitative practices. Marxists state that “the victims of exploitative practices would result into situation where the bourgeoisies can be overthrown through a socialist revolution leads by workers and brings a re-establishment of social order into society if bourgeoisies are not careful. Similarly, there would be “socialist internationalism” that may not be limited by states’ boundaries, where the workers all over the world would unite to fight their common enemies if the care is not taken, since the states are artificial mechanism created by bourgeoisies to dominate others.

3.1.6 Systemic Theory of Conflict

This theory sees every society as a systemic mechanism that comprises many parts that function together. That is, whenever there is conflict in any part of a society, the entire systemic media of that society would feel its consequence. According to this theory, systemic factors leading to human’s discomfort including environmental degradation and uncontrolled population growth reducing access to human basic needs, most especially, in the urban centres. The scarcity of resources or uneven allocation of resources due to lopsided of political processes and competitions, breakdown of cherished values and traditions play a crucial role in the manifestation of social instability and dysfunction, widespread of poverty in the midst of plenty, domination and marginalisation of some groups and ethnicity are good causes of systemic conflict (Faleti, 2004:53). Once systemic conflicts exist in a society, it would affect large numbers of people negatively.

In other words, some systemic factors directly or indirectly put pressure on preventive strategies that meant to support social stability.

3.2 PSYCHOLOGICAL PERSPECTIVE OF CONFLICT THEORIES

3.2.1 ABRAHAM MASLOW'S THEORY

Maslow propounded theory concerning human needs and their effect on human behaviour. He suggested that human needs can be classified into five different groups or classes:

1. Physiological Needs

The basic needs of every organism are food, water, oxygen, shelter, clothing, and sleep. He as well includes somewhat less basic needs like sex or social activity, in which if they are denied by anybody, it will snowball or degenerated into conflict.

2. Safety Needs

The theory as well refers to the needs of persons in a stable environment as ordered of existence, which should be relatively free of threats to safety of human existence.

3. Social Needs

The needs for affectionate relation with other individuals and place must be accepted by one's peers.

4. Esteem Needs

This is the need for a stable firm based self evaluation. That is, the need for self respect, self-esteem, and esteem of others should not be negotiated.

5. Needs for Self Actualization

The need for self-fulfillment and achievement of full capacity structured are the hierarchy Maslow's human needs theory. The theory proceeds from basic needs to cluster social needs. Porter (1961) defines the need for fulfillment as difference between how much should it be? and how much is connected with the management positions? The fulfillment stood for those factors that affected job/human satisfaction most. According to Maslow, the starting point for motivation theory is called physiological needs. When one is achieved or satisfied, an individual becomes dominated by a drive for the other unsatisfied needs through a process calls "Fulfillment of Progression".

3.2.2 Human Needs Theory

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), this theory like frustration–aggression and deprivation theory states that all human beings have some basic needs which they seek to fulfill, the denial or frustration of these needs by some groups or individuals would affect them and lead to or generates conflict (Rosati et al., 1990).

The basic human needs are physical, psychological, social, and spiritual needs, while providing access to one and deny or hinder access to another would amount to denial, which will make people result into conflict and even violence, in an attempt to secure their needs. Human needs theory identifies deprivation of needs as a source of conflict. Similarly, Burton (1979: 72) demonstrated frustration of human needs as a force that produces aggression when individuals strive to satisfy their basic needs. Burton asserts that individuals cannot be taught to accept practices that would destroy their identity and goal attach to their needs, but may be forced to react against the factors, groups, or institutions that threaten their needs. Therefore, human needs for survival, protection, affection, understanding, participation, creativity, identity, etc. are shared by people and irrepressible. They have components like recognition, identity, security, and autonomy, and bonded with those who are unable to give up easily no matter how political institution or social system tries to frustrate or suppresses them.

Gurr (1970: 22) and Mar-Neef (1991) on relative deprivation thesis state that tensions between the deprivation and potential are addressed by human needs theory. That is, when people are not sufficiently satisfied, economic and socio-political crises would continue to grow. Political and economic imbalances within the society lead to fear of survival, xenophobia, crime, violence, refugees, human displacement, political marginalisation, etc. In other words, frustration of human needs hampers actualisation of groups or individual potentials or dreams, and subsequently leads to conflict (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Burton emphasises inclusive explanation for spectrum of motives, which are girds of African conflicts. Human needs theory of conflict begins with the hypothesis that is obvious of biological needs for food and shelter. There is basic socio- psychological of human needs that relate to their growth and development. Such needs include needs for identity, security, recognition, participatory, and autonomy. Conflicts result from this theory ignores or suppresses developmental needs that are satisfied or catered for by institutions, if the institutions are stable, and societies are significantly free of conflicts". Human needs theory discounts explanatory models of conflicts that fault the innate sinfulness and rejects mechanistic perspectives that tend to view individual as infinitely malleable biologically.

In other words, there are limits to extent at which a person can act separately within a wider ethnic or national community without being socialized or manipulated". This view echoes John Stuart Mill's earlier contention that:

Human nature is not a machine to be built on a model and do exactly the work prescribed, but like a tree that requires to grow and develop itself in all sides according to tendency of inward forces which make it a living thing.

Given this limitation on malleability of individuals, deep-rooted in demands for individuals and groups to make certain adjustments in behaviours are unacceptable and probably beyond the tolerance and capabilities of human. Whereas individual is responsive for opportunities of improvement in their life-style and sense malleability. There is no malleability in acceptance of denial of ontological needs such as security, recognition, participation, autonomy, and dignity. Consequently, any political system that denies or suppresses the needs of human would eventually generate protest and conflict. If one should go beyond the mere and ultimately ineffectual containment of “dissident” symptomatic behaviour of deep-rooted conflicts, one would need to alter some norms of institutions and policies that bring adjustment within the range of human acceptability and capability.

3.2.3 Frustration-Aggression Theory of Conflict: According to Berkowitz and Yates (1962), this appears to be the most common explanation of violent behaviour stemming from inability of people to fulfil needs. Anifowose (1982:6) states that those theorists that rely on this explanation used psychological theories of motivation and behaviour, as well as frustration- aggression to explain it. In other words, the feeling of disappointment may lead to expression of anger through violent act which may be directed towards those who are responsible for the situation, or those who are directly or indirectly related to them. Nevertheless, the feelings of frustration are becoming widespread among the populace, since many are getting less opportunity than what they are expected, deserved, or bargained. In view of this, the leaders or actors in societies need to know what is expected of them and seek for negotiation, but some leaders see negotiation as a sign of weakness which usually degenerated into conflict (Adedoyin, 2015).

3.2.4 Biological Theory of Conflict: According to Thomas Hobbes theory, it is inherent in human nature to be selfish, solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short. This theory believes that human’s ancestors were instinctively violent, and through evolution human being evolves, and makes their offspring bear destructive impulse in their genetic makeup. Similarly, St. Augustine, Malthusian and Sigmund Freud belief that human beings are driven by natural instincts of self-preservation and self-actualisation. Neibuhr (1953) “humans are driven by natural quest of “will-to-live” and “will to power” in order to seek power, personal security or survival at the expense of other people around them.

The theory supports the innate theory of conflict that states “conflict is an innate instinct within all animals including human beings, and influences their social interactions (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020). In other words, human beings are higher animal species that possess the tendency of being violent over cherished values”, that is, conflict is directly or indirectly inherent in man. It can be well explained through innate properties, attributes, hormonal compositions, and heredities. The aggressive instinct in human provokes when human felt threaten or challenge by their counterparts. That was why, Sigmund Freud describes destructive tendency in human as a product of “dialectical struggle” between the two natural instincts in-charge (Eros and Thanatos). The ‘Eros’ is associated with the life and survival, while the ‘Thanatos’ is associated with the aggressive and death tendency. The theory states that every member of society should learn how to control or develop coping mechanism for their expression in terms of life or death instinct. According to Freud, both instincts are always struggling to release their instinct, and any instinct that wins the contest to dominate would overcome and manifest itself. Whenever Eros instinct is released first, its resultant effect would be aggression to survive which may tend to conflict, but whenever Thanatos instinct overcome or release first, it would produce suicide mission/tendency of self-killing (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2.5 Psycho-social/Cultural Theory of Conflict: Ross (1993:18) views this theory from the perspective of enemy image creation that deep-seated in human attitudes or actions from early stage of growing up as explanation of social conflict. Ross contends that although there are different forms of identities, but those identities based on ethnic origin and culture better explain social conflict. The theory postulated identity as a reason for social conflict that takes longer time to manage. This is because some groups may have been discriminated against or deprived of satisfaction on some basic needs like material things or non-material things based on identity. The conflict causes by identity crisis is usually dangerous and more violent in nature due to unshakable sense of identity or self worth that makes life meaningful to people, which may include feelings for physical, social, psychological and spiritual safety. The view of psycho-social theory on this postulation states that people’s brain or minds can easily be manipulated into conflict or violent nature by upbringing, if one is not careful. The theory believes that aggressive nature can be learned within a society, or directly and indirectly acquired by members of a society if their social superstructure allows it. This theory cited suicide bombers as examples, especially, in the Middle East and North East of Nigeria. It could also be adduced to why security institutions, most especially, police; military, para-military forces, etc. are violent in nature (Adedoyin, 2015).

3.2.6 Realist Theory of Conflict

This is similar to biological theory, in terms of roots of conflict inherent in human nature, such as selfishness and engagement in the pursuit of personal or self interest for power. Realists in Morton (1973) state that competitive process between the actors primarily known as state and non-state actors is a natural expression of conflict in their pursuit of scarce and competitive interests. The theory identifies three realist components. The first component is descriptive realist that sees the world as an entity of conflict; second component is explanatory realist that seeks to identify genetic defects as factors that push human kind to negative behaviours (Koestler; 1967) and makes war inevitable, due to lack of mechanisms or control mechanisms to stop conflicts from being occurred (Walt, 1959:232); and third component is prescriptive realist that builds on descriptive arguments and explanations. Realist theory states that decision makers have moral justifications of depending on basic interest and self-preservation by using all necessary means. In view of this, all parties involved in a conflict need to deal with the outcomes and consequences of conflict from their own perspectives, since conflict is inevitable and sometimes unavoidable. Realist theory justifies the use of force in national and international relations or diplomatic relations, and sees arms struggle as a means of deterrence, balance of powers, control mechanism, etc. The realist theory elevates power and state to a status of ideology that generates conflict (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.3 Assumptions of Conflict Theories

3.3.1 Assumption on Ethnicity and Conflict

According to Person, Novak, and Gleason (1982:1), the word “ethnic” was derived via Latin from the Greek *ethnos*, which means nation or race. Ethnicity has been viewed since the earliest times in terms of a group setting associated with the idea of nationhood. But in recent years, the instrumentalists viewed the ethnicity and ethnic conflicts in Africa and the rest of the world as something that is not natural cultural residual but consciously crafted by ideological creation. It sees ethnic conflicts as a result of manipulations by social elite who incite and distort ethnic/nationalist consciousness into instrument of pursuing personal interest or ambitions. The problem of the thought despite it contains of some validity cannot be ignored completely due to some core motives or elements of ethnic conflicts. The indicators such as fear of unknown, psychology of people, and symbolic controversies importance can less be comprehensible to “outsider”. That was why, Thomson (2000:58) defines ethnic group as “a community of people who have the conviction that they have common identity and common fate based on the issues of origin, kinship ties, traditions, cultural uniqueness, and shared a history and possibly shared a Language”.

Toland (1993:3) basically agrees with Thomson in her conception of ethnic group, but takes it one step further by adding a sense of belongingness at individual level... Ethnicity is a sense of people's belongingness. They share common culture and history within a social enclosure.

According to Bamass, ethnicity and nationalism are not 'givens' but have socio-political constructions. They are created by elites who are drawing or gaining on distorted and socio-fabricated materials from other cultural properties that they claimed to represent. All these are carried out in order to protect their wellbeing or existence, or gaining political and economic advantage for themselves. The process is invariably involves competition and conflict for political power, economic benefits, and social status between the political elite, class, and leadership of groups within or among the different ethnic categories" (Kruger 1993: 11-12). In the light of above discussions, it is important to note that differences in values or regional development between or within the ethnic groups did not as such promote ethnicity and ethnic conflict. Brass states that "... Ethnic self-consciousness, ethnically based demands, and ethnic conflict occur if there is conflict between the indigenous and external elites or authorities within the indigenous elites" in society.

The assumption further states that "ethnic identity has a symbolic dimension that makes conflict arises in an intense manner than otherwise. It is a symbolic capability of defining individuals' totality of existence including feelings of hopes, fears, and sense for future occurrences. Any action or activity that undermines certain ethnic group and diminishes its status evokes hostile nature of such group including violence. An aggressive ethnic militia would not hesitate of violence once their life or group is being threatened by certain elements. In other words, sometimes, the ethnic attachment occurs because of their primordialism. That is, the cultural values, identity differences, as well as group interests influence relationship between or among individuals or groups of individual, either positively or negatively. When it is negative, it becomes a source of social conflict. From sociological perspective, cultural identity paves way for one ethnic group to be seeing as intruder or interloper that needs to be prevented from encroach the other cultural interests. While political perspective sees agitation for power or power consciousness and its advantages as sources of tension between or among individuals or groups of individual in a social system. In this sense, groups of individual sharing the same cultural identity would less engage in activities that can eliminate, neutralise or injure their members or monopolise source of resources that has high tendency of causing negative relationship among them (Maoz, 1982).

Phenomenon of inferiority or superiority is often twisted their perceptions of one another and created conditions for negative interactions that invariably produce conflict (Adedoyin, 2015).

3.1.7 Assumption on Culture and Conflict

Culture simply means the total-sum of human existence comprising norms, values, traditions, beliefs, customs, languages, behavioural pattern, art, music, food, mode of dressing and so on. It has been delineated along number of dimensions by some scholars such as Glen Fisher in his book called *Mindsets*. In a Chapter calls *Weaver's Book* (1998:140), Glen Fisher characterizes society into two types, namely: (1.) those that are based on achievement; and (2.) those that are living on ascription. Those identified as "achievers" emphasize activities in contrast to those "ascribe" society. The first values are change and action, whereas the latter values are stability and harmony. Weaver (1998:72-74) likening culture to an iceberg, in which only the tip is seen above the water line. That is, the part that is obvious was external part of culture, which is explicitly learned, conscious and more easily changed. Its external culture includes elements that are considered as "culture", such as music, literature, drama, foods, dress, customs, and verbal communications.

However, there is also an internal culture which could be implicitly learned but difficult to change just like the analysis of waterline below in the iceberg analogy. It includes beliefs, values, thought patterns, attitudes, non-verbal communications, and perceptions. The belief systems are interrelated, and any "belief system" learned from the early life are difficult to change. It is as well difficult to know fully and understand internal culture of some ethnic groups from a different group despite it is their ways of life.

Geert Hofstede in Weaver 1998:148-158, identifies four dimensions of culture determining the behaviours of people. But two are more particularly relevant to conflict transformation (p.149):

1. Power distance – defines the extent to which the less powerful person in society accepts inequality and considers it normal. That is, all societies are unequal, but some nations are more unequal than the other.
2. Individualism – opposes collectivism. Individualist cultures assume individuals primarily as people after their own interest and their immediate family.
3. Collectivist culture assumes that individuals through birth and possibly later events belong to groups in which they cannot detach themselves.
4. A collectivist society is tightly integrated; an individualist society is loosely integrated.

Hofstede characterizes American and Northern European societies as generally having low power distance and high individualism. Many African and Latin American societies have large power distance and low individualism. Some of the Southern European societies are at the middle of event with a large power distance and medium individualism. John Paul Lederach in the field of conflict transformation posits that social conflict emerges and develops on the basis of the meaning and interpretation that the people involved attach to their action and event.

3.1.8 The Role of Turner's Theories

Role is defined as a set of activities associated with a given position in an organization, which could include potential behaviours of the position and not those of the incumbent in question. Although Turner accepted a process orientation, he was committed to develop interactionism into "something keen to axiomatic theory". He recognizes that role theory was segmented into series of narrow propositions and hypotheses that other theorist had been reluctant to find unifying themes to link various processes of role. Turner's strategy uses propositions from the numerous research findings to build more formal and abstract theoretical statements. He sought series of statements that can highlight what is tending to occur in a normal operational system of interaction. Turner provided a long list of main tendency propositions on: (a) roles as they emerge; (b) roles as an interactive framework; (c) roles in relation to actors; (d) roles in societal settings; (e) roles in organizational settings; and (f) roles and person. Moreover, the roles tend to be complementing one another like parent/child roles; and boss/employee roles that operate regularize interaction among the complementary roles.

Role in Societal Settings

1. Similar roles in different contexts tend to be merged such that they are identified as single role recurring in different relationships (Tendency for economy of roles).
2. Roles refer to general social contexts, situations, and differentiation tends to link roles to social values (Tendency for value anchorage).
3. Individual in society as well tends to be assigned and assumed consistence roles with one another (Tendency for allocation consistency).
4. Many roles are identified, assumed, and imputed in relation to a broader societal context.

Turner argued that people tends to group behaviours in different contexts to few unifying roles as it is possible or practicable. People identify role as a way of making sense of disparate behaviours in different contexts.

At the societal level, values are equivalent goals in organizational settings that identify, differentiate, allocate, evaluate and legitimatizing roles. Finally, all the people tend to assume multiple roles that are common to one another.

Role of Business in Conflict Situations

Widening communities of business around the world is making the adoptions of new approaches to corporate social responsibilities and triple bottom line of profitability couple with socio-environmental responsibilities inevitable. In other words, under normal circumstances, the private sector should help to prevent violent conflict like public and aid support investments. They are as well needed to be guided to prevent the side effects of their negative environmental impacts on socio-structural stability of the host society, and ensure ways in which they can maximum their positive benefits.

The businesses such as local small and medium size enterprises, multinationals and large national companies play useful roles in conflict situations and prevention. This is because it involves higher risks of costs of businesses. In other words, in the best interest of businesses there must be support efforts from corporate organisations to prevent or manage conflicts very well to avoid exacerbation of conflicts. That is, it is imperative for each or every business enterprises/organization to involve in peacemaking and peacebuilding activities. This is because it is only under a peaceful atmosphere and environment that “corporate culture” of organization could be accomplished. The challenges facing corporate organization in doing this include how to:

- Develop a sufficient long-term perspective that promotes sustainable development and helps to reduce conflict and strike a balance between long-term and short-term investment horizons with need for quick returns in unstable situations.
- Understand the roles of some trade actors or networks that cause or exacerbate conflict, particularly, in the extractive industries like diamond, oil, forest products, etc. that are major sources of revenue to warring parties and arms sellers.
- Encourage big businesses to stimulate local development, job creation, basic social infrastructure, especially, in the remote areas. This will contribute to a long-term social stability and improvement of the local livelihoods.
- Link the social investment programmes that are supported by companies, particularly, the health and education sectors for development and conflict management.

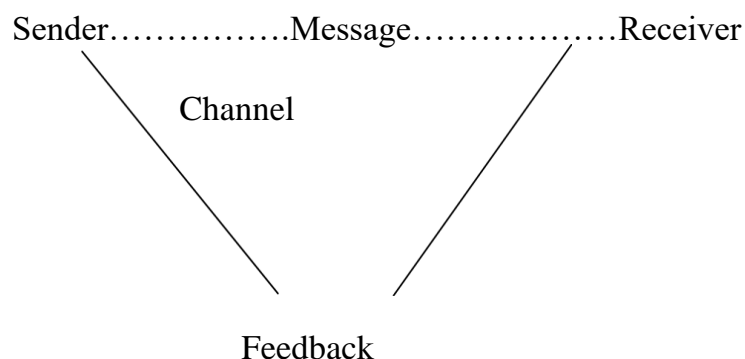
- Harness the potential role of companies as players who could use their influence positively on political actors, and not only to negotiate immediate conditions for their investments but also to prevent violent conflicts.

Ensure that the use of public security agents like military personnel by companies to secure their installations and protect their staff is not at the expense of local population, and that, any illegitimate armed groups or youths are not inadvertently supported or financed by them.

The Concept of Communication in Conflict

The concept of communication in conflict is broad and rich in meaning. As a basic social process, communication is the means by which people relates with each other or one another. It is a human process, and through various channels of media, the process is taking place over a great distance and time. It is a shared process involving five elements namely: 1. Sender; 2. Message; 3. Channel, 4. Receiver; and 5. Feedback. The sender constructs a message, which he/she hopes to stimulate certain kind of response from the receiver. The message is shared through a channel. The receiver would equally active in processing the message and give a meaning to it before response. The receiver would send the feedback to the sender. The feedback would help the sender to know that the message had been received and how it was understood. In other words communication is not a one – way process. The massagers are not “magic bullets” that knock out “targetted audiences”.

The Communication Process



Some common communication terms

Audience: A specific group of people that someone wishes to communicate with or pass information about something to.

Message: These are signs and symbols of many kinds designated to stimulate certain kinds of response from a receiver.

Channels: These are the media body that disseminates people's communication to the world. They include mass media such as audio, audio-visual, and print systems. They engage in coverage of group discussion, oral literature, meetings at the village square, etc.

Sender: Is an individual that constructs messages and send to the intended receiver.

Receiver: Is someone or a group of people that message is targeted at, and who in return send (s) feedback to the sender after reading meaning to it.

Feedback: Is the decoded message that helps the sender to know if the message had been received and how it is understood.

Hence, the requisite need for any organization or community to be peaceful is effective mode of communication. In other words, effective communication is a critical need of everybody. According to Oyeleye (1997) communication is the sharing of messages, ideas, etc, among the participants. It is not restricted to the use of words alone. It could be verbally or symbolically. It includes signs and symbols through which the meanings are convey from one person to another. Silence could as well be a mean of communication sometimes. Whenever the feelings and some other elements of human are added to the transmission of information, it is called communication. Similarly, the psychologists are as well shown interested on communication. They emphasize human problems in communication process like initiation, transmission, and receiving of information. They focused on the identification of barriers of good communication, most especially, those that involved interpersonal relationships of people.

There is no doubt effective communication remains a crucial tool to a proper management of conflicts. This gives impetus when it was understood that poor communication system brews incessant human, societal, and invariably industrial problems that degenerated into larger conflicts. Bornstein Jurgenson and Papciak (1988:889) state that "communication enables group to cooperate" and discuss their dilemma, forges a group's identity and enables people to commit themselves to cooperation, and sometimes, often doubling cooperation.

They submitted further that open, clear, forthright communication reduces MISTRUST. Without communication, those who expect others to cooperate usually refuse to cooperate themselves (Pruitt and Kimmel, 1977; Messe and Sivacek, 1979).

Anyone who mistrusts would always be uncooperative to protect against exploitation. Non-cooperation in returns feed further mistrust. It has been much discovered that communication reduces mistrust, and enabling people to reach agreement that lead to common betterment. That is, knowing the good does not necessarily lead to doing good. Every individual's commitment and compliance can be explored through communication. Eyre (1983) communication is not just a giving of information; it is the giving of understandable information, and understanding of the message. Communication is a transferring of message (s) to another party such that it can be understood and acted upon.

Hence, the pivotal role of information in conflict situation must not be underestimated. Information given can either be manipulative or constructive. There is no doubt information is a key component of every human relation. Communication is an integral part of conflict. This not a surprise because those participating in organized violence are often made use of media to attack opponents and spread wrong information. For example, the need for good information even in political process has underlined that many interest groups manipulated information during crisis through mismanagement of information. In contemporary societies, the quantity and quality of information are varied dramatically and dependent on a wide range of factors from level of literacy to social cohesiveness and stability of available technology. Central to the availability and quality of information is the media..... the written press, radio, and television as well as other means of communication, such as theatre, film or video, books, meetings, and words of mouth. Whether predominantly literate or illiterate societies, cultural activities... in form of live music, dance, satire, drama and poetry...also communicate social, economic, and political ideas. The media helps to shape popular perceptions of the nature and scope of conflicts, as well as potential alternatives to conflict. Wherever socio-political and economic conflicts have degenerated into widespread violence, the role of information in mitigating the effects of violence and present alternatives cannot be underestimated and crucial. However, one of the major weaknesses of media in Africa, most especially, the print media, is the glaring ineffective or inefficiency in reaching the rural people who are majority of the population; although, the recent growth of indigenous language press is filling the gap.

The quality of information disseminated to populace sometimes is often very poor. Those who manage the information, education, and communication programmes/activities in community peacemaking efforts are finding it difficult and complicated at times due to language barrier.

Despite the fact that globalization lead to time-space compression; exogenous media has not been able to provide or cater effectively for information dissemination needed by rural dwellers. This is because prevailing socio-environmental factors that compelled Africans revolving a way from communication best suited the circumstances which they find themselves are still very much prevalent in their rural communities. Illiteracy, lack of electricity and other socio-economic amenities/facilities in the rural areas and high cost of installing communication gadgets made exogenous media of communication unsuitable for African rural communities. In retrospect, some African rural communities still very much believe in traditional modes of information dissemination. However, in support of the importance of traditional media of communication, Owens – Obie (1994) states that “traditional network have been the most significant discovery in the last few years of working with grassroots people often broad called indigenous communication, it represent a breakthrough in information campaign and innovation diffusion strategies over the year”.

Nevertheless, for rural communications to be more effective, they must taking cognizance of ineffective nature of endogenous (traditional) means of communication only. They must incorporated exogenous (modern) means of communication as well.

4.0 CONCLUSION

The above discussed theories, assumptions and concept are imperative and expedient for this course, because, they provided enabling opportunities for students to appropriate practical linkage among variables during the course of their assignments, term papers, and projects. The conflict theories from sociological/psychological perspectives exposed students to various views, opinions, ideologies, and assertions propounded by some scholars on this field

5.0 SUMMARY

With reference to the theories discussed in this unit, it is believed that students must have derived enough understanding skills and benefits of those theories to their course and further academic work. The unit must have exposed them to various multidimensional theories of conflict.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. With a reference to a conflict situation of your choice, apply one or two of the conflict theories discussed to your chosen conflict situation.
2. Identify and discuss any theories applicable to Nigerian present socio-economic and political situations.
3. Which of the theories can be applied to the global socio-political conditions and why?
4. Justify the relevance of Karl Marx's Theory to the modern day conflicts.
5. Explain the relationship between culture and conflict.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2020) & (2015). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Burton, John (1990 a). *Conflict: Human Needs Theory*. London: Macmillan.
- Burton, John (1990 b). *Conflict: Resolution and Prevention*. London
- Cohen, Percy S. (1968). *Modern Social Theory*. London: Heinemann.
- Coser, Lewis; *The Functions of Social Conflict*. New York: Free Press.
- Gurr, Ted R. (1970). *Why Men Rebel*. Princeton University Press.
- Cuba, L. and Coking J. (1997). *How to Write about the Social Sciences*. Essex: Longman.
- Denzin, N. (1989 (a)). *Interpretive Interactionism*. Newbury Park, C. A. Sage.
- _____(1989 (b)). *The Research Act: A Theoretical Introduction to Sociological Methods*. Third Edition. Englewood Cliffs, N. J: Prentice-Hall.
- Folger, J. P. (1997). *Working Through Conflict: Strategies for Relationships*. New York. Macmillan.
- Cohen, Percy S. (1968) *Modern Social Theory*. London Heinemann.
- Coser, Lewis; *The Functions of Social Conflict*. New York: Free Press.
- Dentsch, Morton. 'Subjective Features of Conflict Resolution: Psychological, Social and Cultural Influences' in Raimo Vayrynen ed. (1991) *New Direction in Conflict Theory: Complicit Resolution and Transformation*. London: Sage.
- Gurr, Ted R. (1970). *Why Men Rebel*. Princeton University Press.
- Isard, Walter (1992). *Understanding Conflict and the Science of Peace*. Cambridge M. A.: Blackwell.

- Lorenz, K. (1966). *On Aggression*. New York: Harcourt Brace World.
- Maslow, Abraham (1970). *Motivation and Personality* (2nd Ed). New York: Macmillan.
- Rosalt, T., Carroll, D. and Coate, R. (1990): "A Critical Assessment of the Power of Human Needs in World Society", in Burton J. and Dukes, F. *Conflict: Human Needs Theory*.
- Yates, A. (1962), *Frustration and Conflict*. London Methuen.
- Zinberg, N. E. and Feldman, G. A. (1967) *Violence: Biological Needs and Social Control*. Social Forces.

UNIT 3 DYNAMICS AND IMPACTS OF CONFLICT

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Conflict Cycle or Conflict Progression Stages
 - 3.2 Conflict Energy
 - 3.3 Impact of Conflict
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

According to Lederach (1977:65) conflict is not a static phenomenon but expressive, dynamic and dialectical in nature. Invariably, every conflict situation contains certain predictable elements and dynamics that are amendable to a regulation and change. The conflict escalations and de-escalations are often propelled by the opportunity provided and the willingness of the parties involved. In other words, resources provided for a conflict situation are the opportunities available for the conflicting parties, while their willingness to execute it is their desire. This usually occurs when the parties involved in a conflict are convinced of their actions that change their situation, and ready to execute such actions irrespective of the consequences. The resources available and the willingness to execute it complement one another. This means, the history, context and time of the conflict situation are synonymous with the stages coupled with its early warning signals or conflict indicators' attributes and features. Sometimes, the parties involved in a conflict may be pretending or preferred to use avoidance strategy initially, which may not be best approach and even be dangerous to human relations (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Knowing the root causes of conflicts does not automatically proffer solution or clue on how to prevent or manage them since inherent dynamic of conflict tend to give it a life cycle. Conflicts emerge/evolve in cyclical pattern with several vicious situations that are closely entertained in this unit. Both the opportunity and willingness are complimentary in nature in the sense that one may have the means to act but may not be willing to do so or the willingness to act may be there but the means is lacking. In the light of the above, for conflict to move from one stage to the other, both elements must be present because they are dependent on each other.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- explain dynamism or progressions of conflict
- discuss stages of conflict or conflict cycle
- enumerate two sides of conflict energy
- discuss the impact of conflict.

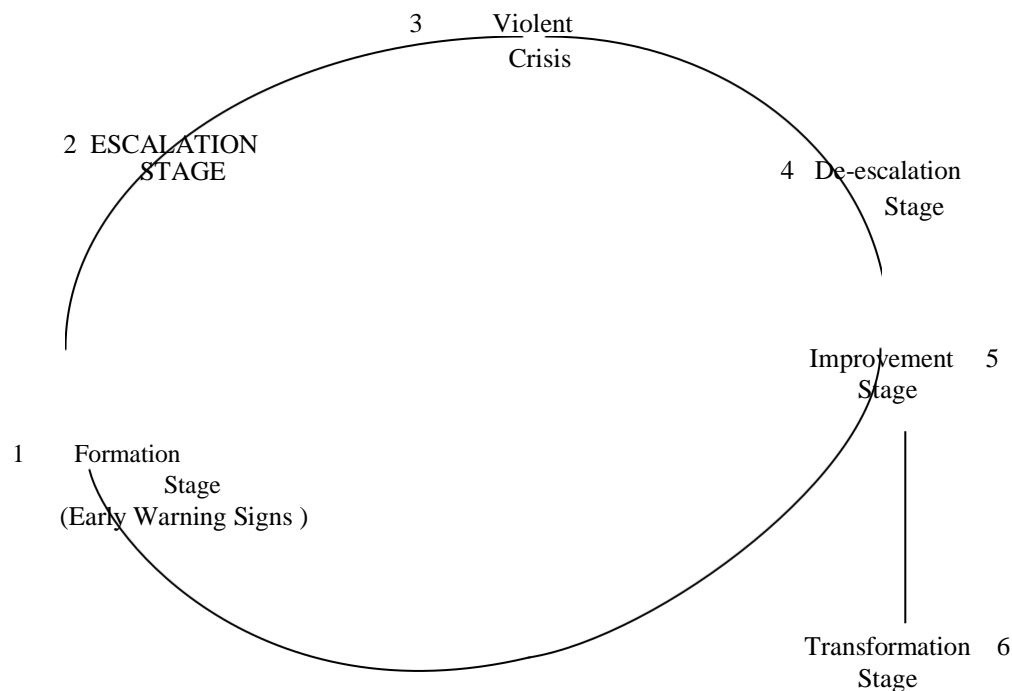
3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Stages of Conflict/Conflict Cycle

Most of the conflict situations either personal, group(s), national(s) or international(s) are unfolded in stages rather than sudden eruptions. The inability to identify conflict indicators paves way for conflict manifestation. In other words, there are six identifiable stages of conflict progression, which are latent, emergence, escalation, optimal (violence or crisis point), de-escalation, and transformation. They are cyclical in nature once a conflict situation is not well handled or managed properly initially. That is, conflict progresses from one stage to another when the stakeholders (the oppressed and the oppressor) become more aware of a conflict of interest, have means of reactions, and mobilize to engage the prevailing situation.

3.1.2 Stages of Conflict

The six identifiable stages of conflict could be further sub-divided into smaller stages like injustice, ignorance, insensitivity, intolerance, misperception, communication break, or gap, lack of professionalism, subjectivity, and provocation -which means escalation processes. De-escalation processes are joint problem solving, third parties intervention, dialogue/negotiation, better communication, tolerance, shifting of position, mutual understanding, trust, etc (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).



Conflict Progressions Chart, CRESNET Training Manual, 2001.

STAGES OF CONFLICT

According to Fisher et al. (2000) stages in conflict situations are latent, emergent, escalation, optimal, de-escalation and transformation. According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), they are as follow:

1. Latent stage

This is a pre-conflict stage. It is a stage where the perceived incompatible goals between or among the conflicting parties are degenerated into future open conflict. At this stage, conflict scenarios are believed or assumed not to have been known by the parties involved, or known by the parties but using avoidance strategy to handle the situations.

2. Emergence stage

This is a state of conflict manifestation. It is a situation whereby the parties involved in a conflict would know or aware of their conflict situation but directly or indirectly allow it to manifest due to ignorance or carelessness. The stage is characterised by occasional argument, disagreement, fighting, intolerance, alliance formation, and allied searching by the parties involved, in terms of resource mobilisations, strain relationship, and polarisation.

3. Escalation stage

This is a stage where the parties involved in a conflict or conflicting parties aware of their strain relationship or problem. They realise that something are fundamentally wrong in their relationship and allow it to get proliferated. The stage is referred as a stage of position taking, support seeking, communication breaks or gap -where alliance would be formed. The conflicting parties attack one another, and their perceptions get distorted or bad. Although it may not be so severed as it would be at the optimal or violence stage, where there would be total violence or crisis situation.

4. Optimal stage (violence or crisis stage)

This is the peak of every conflict situation, where violent or non-violent acts happened. At this stage, the conflict outcomes are varied, in terms of waging of war, intense fighting, killing(s) or injuries, raping, kidnapping, population displacement or mass refugees' emancipation, small arms and light weapon proliferations, etc.

5. Containment stage

This is a stage at which the escalation of a conflict comes to a halt, which could be due to conflicting parties exhausted of their weapons supplied and resulting to a lower intensity of fight. At this stage, there would be hope for negotiations and mediation efforts of the interveners. That is, a third party truce would emerge. Sometimes, the peacekeeping forces may be introduced to protect each side against possibility of breaches of the truce signed by either of the conflicting parties. The truce agreement would allow provision for humanitarian needs to those who are victims, particularly, vulnerable groups.

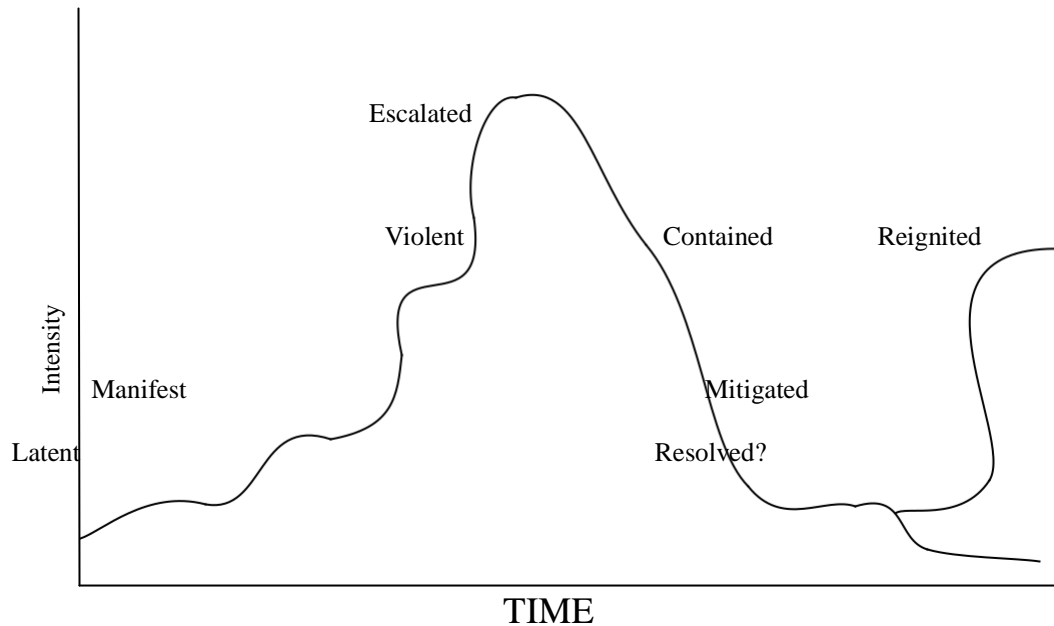
6. De-escalation stage

This is believed or could be referred as a conflict intense or effect reduction stage. It is a stage where every conflict situation passed through. It is a cease-fire declaration stage. A stage where conflicting parties surrender their conflict matters to a third party intervention, which can be government, international organisations, NGOs, individuals, etc. as mediators, arbitrators or peace facilitators, and so on. The interveners at times may need to impose cease-fire situation on the parties involved, because, what is paramount at this stage is a cessation from violence or hostility to a peaceful situation, by bringing a conflicting situation to a non-violent situation. This stage gives ways for peacemaking consultation, dialogue, negotiation and any other alternative means of conflict management mechanisms.

7. Transformation stage

This is a post-conflict peacebuilding situation that encompasses programmes like disarmament, demobilisation, re-construction, re-integration (DDRR), etc. The violent or hostility at this stage must have been overcome, and the crisis situation must have been ended.

It is a stage where the perceived underlying causes of conflict are transformed. The perceived incompatible goals that led to conflict initially are trashed out or tackled. Once this is done, it would prevent re-occurrence of such violent conflict and prevents its cyclical nature.



CONFLICT PROGRESSION CHART; BJORN MOLLER, 2001.

8. Mitigation stage

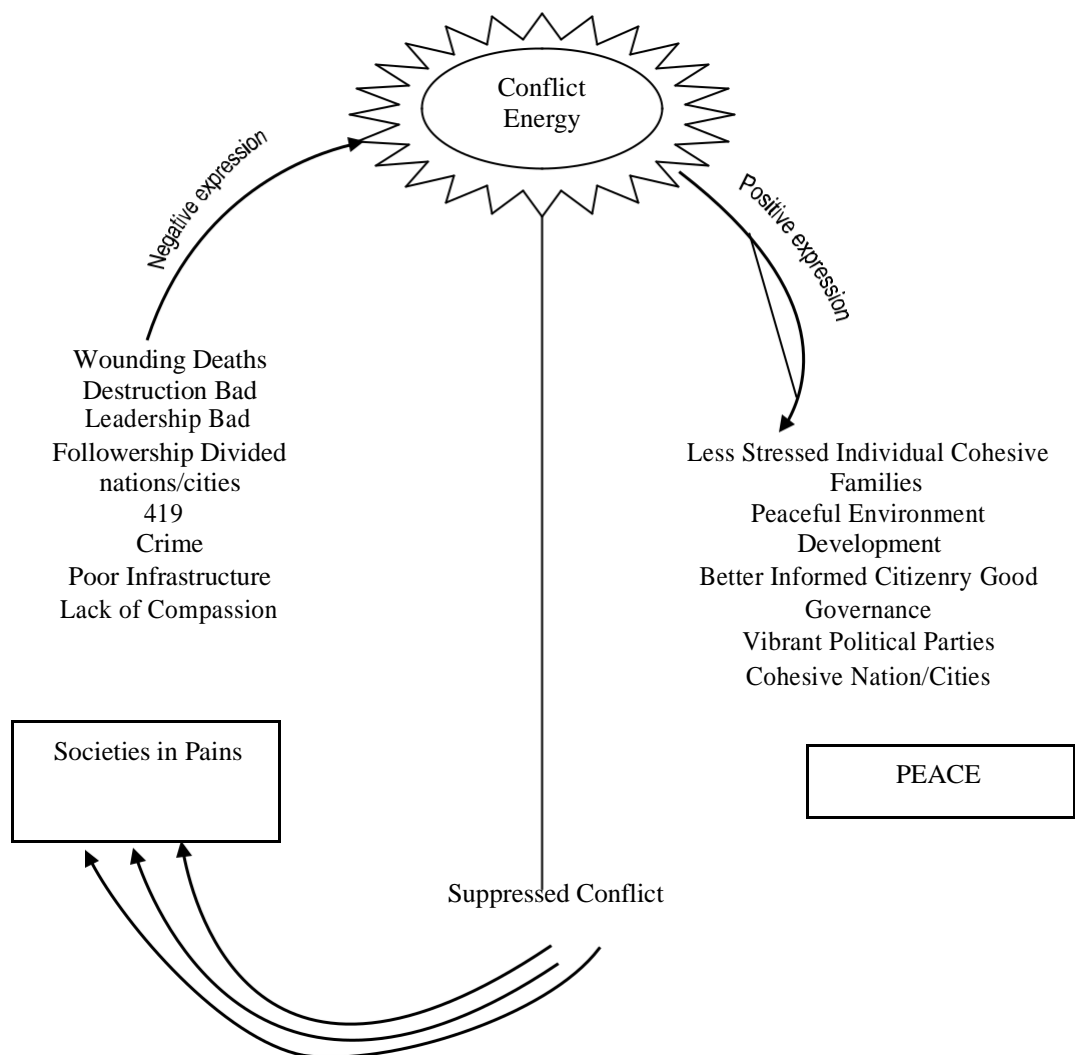
Mitigated stage of any conflict is the period during which the basic causes of conflict remain in place, but the conflict behaviour and attitude has been significantly changed with reduce or less violence situation and more political mobilization and negotiation. At this stage, the ray of post-conflict recovery can easily be read and felt in the minds of political leaders of the opposing sides, while humanitarian agencies are at the advantage of gaining new leverage to provide assistance (but not unconditional).

9. The Resolution stage

This stage is mostly on assumption and unachievable. It is just like healing the wounds of a body and removing its scars. It is always be in ideal state of conflict management. Its post-conflict peace-building determine what would be the end of a conflict intervention. For tangible and enduring or sustainable success to be accomplished, both the underlying causes of the conflict and immediate consequences must be addressed.

This includes identification of power relationships, bringing those responsible to a trial, and facilitation of reconciliation between the opposing sides as a precondition for future coexistence. At this stage, humanitarian assistance is very crucial in order to ensure total disarmament, demobilization and reintegration of ex-combatants including child soldiers and women combatants, which is in most cases hardly achieved. That is, bringing all the warring factions under controls always constitute serious problems in post-conflict era.

3.2.1 Conflict Energy



Conflict Resolution Stakeholders' Network (CRESNET); Training Manual, 2001.

3.3 Impact of conflict

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) the fact that conflict is an inevitable phenomenon makes it mandatory for every human being to develop or design an appropriate mechanism to manage it. Despite all the efforts, the impacts of conflict are still abound and obvious in various societies. Laue (2005:14) conflict is an escalated competition between or among the groups whose aim is to gain advantage over others on resources, interests, values and needs, which at least one of them believes that the dimension of their relationship is mutually incompatible. In other words, the means of livelihood and socio-economic injustices are most responsible factors of conflicts that are inevitable in every social system.

Lund (1997:2-4) sees conflict as an attitude over incompatible values or a pursuance of divergent interests over resources, power, identity and status. According to Laue, conflict as a permanent feature of human's life tends to various competitions and hostilities over set of mutual incompatible goals. It is a bi-facial phenomenon that can be destructive or constructive in nature, and engender society with some decimations and disintegrations that compel victims to migrate or seek relative peace elsewhere. It occasionally emancipates or creative in nature. Exploitation in relationship consequently encourages conflict irrespective of the parties involved. The attendant consequences of conflict are of a great concern to the contemporary society.

Its impacts are always on political, economical, socio-cultural, psychological, ecological, health and development, while its attributes and features are disagreement, disunity, distrusts, collapse of economy system, threat or worsen of health condition, displacement of people or mass refugees, environmental degradation, destruction of land and agricultural produce and other resources. That is why; the attention of experts on conflict was drawn on demographic and economic consequences of vulnerable groups, such as women, children and aged people, as well as the physically challenged persons in the conflict areas. The nature of their vulnerability has been hitherto identified as diseases, poverty, starvation, rape, and sexual violence. The impacts of social conflict are therefore discussed, as follow:

1. Impact of Conflict on Political System

Conflict destroys socio-political system of society, and eliminates future institutional elements or leaders when it is allowed to turn to violent. It sowed seeds of discontented, bitterness and divisions among the members. It destroys or alters human futuristic attainment and transposes mutual understanding to unfavourable situations. Its consequences sometimes are proliferating inequality within the social system. It makes social structures or elements to be vulnerable and creates insecurity situation along the line.

Conflict threatens, intimidates, and results to injuries, destruction of lives and properties when it is not well or constructively handled. Its attributes such as repression, terrorism, genocide, coups d'état, civil strife, ethno-religious conflicts and wars destroy social principle laden of peaceful co-existence. The local, national, and international insecurity is often caused by protracted conflict. Mass displacement of persons and refugee problems are parts of effects of conflict. Conflict on many occasions eroded international orders, relationships, and multilateral institutions' viability.

2. Impact of Conflict on Economic System

Conflict has profound short and long-term consequences on economic resources and social institutions. It destroys local, national, and international economies by skewing productivity abilities or activities toward a hopelessness situation like war. In a conflict situation, assets and resources are depleted, and physical social infrastructures, human capital, economic security, and labour are destroyed or wasted. It disrupts or interrupts trade and economic activities. Merchants and trade systems are collapsed. Public, private, humanitarian agencies, domestic and foreign entrepreneur or investments are scared or reduced. The possibilities of encouraging smoothen economic are threatened or frightened, because, the resources are diverted on conflict prosecution. The arms and ammunitions get proliferated within the social system and constitute insecurity. Financial capabilities meant for the long-term economic plans, agricultural processes, and developmental programmes are diverted on relief materials and post-conflict reconstruction activities.

3. Impact of Conflict on Socio-cultural System

Conflict destroys socio-cultural fabric system or coping mechanisms of any society. The populace suffer effects of conflict. Their lives are endangered, and returning back to the normal ways of life after conflict becomes problem. Conflict destroys family kinships and relationships. It exacerbates divisions among the social institutions. It increases intra or inter-groups insecurity, hostility, discord and disrupt relationship. It prevents people from meeting their basic needs. Vulnerable groups bear the brunt of conflict most. Conflict imposes special burdens on female gender, children, and aged ones. Little children and women are forcefully drafted into soldiering activities during the war. Numbers of orphans and homeless children get multiplied in war situation. It impairs physical and mental problems, and brews violent culture in societies.

4. Psychological Impact of Conflict

The impact of conflict on human psychic is at the level of reasoning -in terms of trauma, most especially, on children, females, and ex-combatants. Internally displaced persons and refugees' ordeals have grave consequences for human nature. Civilian, most especially, the women, children, and aged people bear the brunt of psychological effects of conflict most. Militarization of social institution and structure imposes different burdens on people. Conflict impairs physical and mental problems. It fuels violent nature in human.

5. Ecological Impact of Conflict

This is a situation where physical and biological components of environment are negatively affected. Conflict adverse effect on environment is destructive in terms of destruction of organisms, vegetations, human, animals, agricultural products (crops and livestock), farmland, etc. For example, militant activities such as pipelines vandalism, kidnapping, assassination, etc. are parts of negative impacts of conflict on environment. The forest and other ecological components are destroyed in conflict situations. Vulnerable groups experience famine, drought, and starvation.

6. Health Impact

The impact of conflict on health conditions of living organisms cannot be underestimated, in terms of killing or wastage of lives, spreading of diseases and virus, ordeal of refugees and internally displaced persons. Indulging in prostitution in order to survive by women spreads diseases, HIV virus and Aids across the lands. Lack of potable water, drugs, and other basic necessity contribute to general illness in the areas affected by conflict. The resources that are meant for health care are invariably diverted into war prosecutions, war equipments acquisition, and peace missions. Health facilities, centres or hospitals are destroyed. In war situations, explosion of bombs and their effects spread environmental hazard everywhere. Some people are amputated and raping of females and genital mutilations become the order of the day.

7. Impact of Conflict on Development

Conflict impacts on development activities are bi-facials in nature, which are positive or negative. The positive aspect of conflict is in post-conflict relationships or situations where the lessons must have been learnt from the past experience. Conflict can help to build mutual understanding and better relationship in post-conflict era, just as it is in the recent socio-political situation of Rwanda after war. That was why Burton (1987:137-138) states that "conflict like sex is an essential creative element in human relationship.

It is a means of change and means of articulating social values, welfare, security, justice, and opportunities for development. Indeed... conflict like sex is meant to be enjoyed. It sometimes inspires innovative ideas and developmental competitiveness. It is a mechanism or paradigm of ensuring justice and protection of rights, if it is constructively carried out. On the other hands, conflict can be destructive. Momah (1991:59) state that “conflict in its totality is evil... It destroys or ruins, maims, changes boundaries, topples government of the people, brutalises human psyche or wrecks precious family togetherness, and most often, regrettably sows the seed of discords”. In other words, conflict can be destructive or caused disunity/distrust among the social elements. It can also brew better and mutual understanding between or among the conflicting parties in the end. Conflict is natural. No baby was borne unless a man and woman engage in conflict.

4.0 CONCLUSION

Based on the above discussion, it is now crystal clear that it is important to know the stages or phases of conflict progression so as to enable us to ascertain the step to be taken in the prevention of conflict escalation and management approaches to be adopted in managing conflicts that are at different stages or phases of conflict cycle. Indeed, almost every issue about conflict has been discussed above. There is no doubt, the discussions above and its surrounding factors would avail the students a clear understanding of what conflict is all about and how people should interact or relate within their social system without causing any dysfunctional conflicts. The knowledge of conflict and its attributes or features would provide people opportunities and skills on how to handle their conflict situations successfully, which is the ultimate aim of the course. In other words, conflict is a fact of life and inevitable creative issue. It means different things to different people. To some people, conflict is an agent of change. It is a natural unavoidable phenomenon. Hence, the ability to manage conflict successfully is required from every human being. The best way to handle conflict is by employing constructive approach and sees conflict as a natural multi-dimensional social phenomenon that every human being must leave with.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, two key propelling variables in conflict escalation are discussed together with the stages of conflict, conflict cycle, conflict energy while various conflict impacts were extensively discussed for proper understanding and consumption of the students.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. With particular reference to the key propelling variables in conflict escalation, discuss five stages of conflict of your choice.
2. Define conflict cycle and explain different phases of conflict known to you.
3. With reference to a case study of any past conflict of your choice, discuss the phase or stage of such conflict and the conflict handling style adopted in managing the conflict.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Jeong, Ho-Won (ed): (1999) *Conflict Resolution: Dynamics, Process and Structure* Aldershot: Ashgate,
- Kriesberg, Louis: *Constructive Conflicts. From Escalation to Resolution* (Lanham: Rowman and Littlefield, 1998).
- Lipsey, Roderick K. Von (ed): (1997) *Breaking the Cycle. A Framework for Conflict Intervention* New York: St. Martin's Press.
- Laue, J. H. (1992). *Conflict Resolution* United States: Institute of peace Journal, Vol. 5, No. 5 October Pp 4.
- Lund, M. S. (1997). *Preventing Violent Conflict: A Revised Guide for Practitioners*. Washington D. C. Creative Associates International.
- Miall, Hugh, Oliver Ramsbotham and Tom Woodhouse: (1999). *Contemporary Conflict Resolution: The Prevention, Management and Transformation of Deadly Conflict* Cambridge: Policy Press.
- Rupesinghe, Kumar: (1998). *Civil Wars, Civil Peace. An Introduction to Conflict Resolution* London: Pluto Press.
- Sandole, Dennis J. D. and Hugo Van der Merwe eds. (1993) *Conflict Resolution Theory and Practice. Integrated and Application* Manchester: Manchester University Press.
- Schmid, A. P. (1998). *Thesaurus and Glossary of Early Warning and Conflict Prevention Terms* Erasmus University: Synthesis Foundation.
- Wallensteen, Peter and Margareta Sollenberg: "Armed Conflict, 1989-99". *Journal of Peace Research*, Vol. 37, pm.5 (September 2000).

UNIT 4 VIOLENT CONFLICT/VIOLENCE

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Definition/Meaning of Violent Conflict/Violence
 - 3.2 Types and Causes of Violence
 - 3.3 Effect of Violence/ Violent Conflict
 - 3.4 Preventive Measures and Management of Violence
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The word “violence” encompasses great connotation of concerns that evoke general insecurity. It is an embodiment of protest, militancy, use of force, coercion, destruction or flexing of muscles which a given observant sees and fear or condemn. Whenever it is allowed to exceed certain level of degree, it reduces or alters immediate environment or natural existence of man, animal or plant. Its effect cannot be underestimated in terms of risk of lives, destruction of the properties, disunity, distrust, psychological pains and traumas, disintegration and displacement of people, underdevelopment, etc. All these and more are made-up of this unit.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- discuss violence, its types, causes
- differentiate violence from conflict and vice versa
- state and discuss the violence effects on society
- give reasons for violence in society
- suggest possible solutions to the effect of violence on society

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Definition/Meaning of Violence or Violent Conflict

Violence or violent conflict is a universal concept that defies a common or precise acceptable definition or meaning.

Many scholars view it from different perspectives. Hence, for a better clarification of the subject few of the scholars' definitions of violence would be discussed in this unit.

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), Tamuno (1991:3) discussed "violence as an unlawful use or threat of force". Domenach (1978:718) violence is a use of force, whether overt or covert, in order to wrest from individuals or groups of individual something that are indisposed to give off on free wills. Mackenzie (1975:39) violence is the exercised of physical force in order to inflict injury or cause damage to person, property and actions or conducts that characterise it. Thus means any treatment or usage that tends to cause bodily injury or force interfering with personal freedom. In other words, violence involves the use of force or abuse of other person's fundamental rights.

To Echoes (2004:10) violence is a generic term encompassing different numbers of connotations that depict encounter of lives threatening, which often afflicting several numbers of people lives in communities. Dokun (2005:59) states that violence could be exertion of physical force in order to injure or abuse other people's rights. Violence of physical nature may occur either in rape or wife battering. In other words, violence involves the use of force and abuse of another person's fundamental rights. Smith (1988:110–112) violence is an art of political process... protest activities of one form or the others and efforts to dramatise grievances stably or in consensual manners...(Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Having defined and discussed the meaning of violence, it is noticeable that misconception of violence for conflict or vice-versa becomes a fundamental problem to the millions of people that require better clarifications. In other words, what should be avoided is violence or violent conflict that is destructive in nature. This is because; a costliest peace is cheaper than the cheapest violence. Violence manifests itself as physical, psychological, metaphysical, structural, etc. Expression of violence by a state against others could be socio-political, economical, or spiritual in nature; through wars, terrorism, embargos or sanction, comparative advantage, supremacy or diabolical means, etc. All these could be through coup d'état, state and non-state's actors action. Most of the political violent acts are death sentence, terrorism, electoral violence and assassination, regional separatism, ethnic agitation, economic depravity and sabotage, cultural dominant and discrimination, etc. Simultaneous expression of violence by the state actors and citizens could be covert or terror acts, human right violations, deprivations, assassinations, murders, political thuggeries, etc.

Violence expression by individuals are banditries, occasional misdemeanours scuffles or rapes, compulsive aggression by drugs addicted groups, passion-provoked murder, assassination, mental pathology, lynching of individuals, gangsterism, mafia's bloody sacrifices and rituals, etc. Other actions that constitute violence are mass-action, riot, demonstration, public protest, coercion, militancy, street fighting, etc.

However, the violence types are physical, structural, psychological, biological, institutional/socio-cultural and ecological, etc. All violence types manifest as murder or murder attempts against natural existence of vegetation, populace, policemen, judges, customs officers, intelligence agencies, politicians, guards, journalists, etc., which could be through fire, guns shot, stabling with missiles or kidnapping for ransoms. Others are bank robbery, theft, and burglary, car stealing and snatching at the gun point, rape, traffic accident, deaths, actions of state or non-state actors in arms struggle and its functionaries. The causes of violence are deprivations, exploitations, injustice, mismanagement of information, racism, etc. that manifest in mass-action, riot, demonstration, public protest, coercion, war, militancy, terrorism, murder, armed bandit, street fighting, assassination, etc. (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2 Types of Violence

The violence types within the social system are: structural, physical, ecological, psychological, biological, institutional, socio-cultural, and metaphysical.

A. Structural Violence

This is a social problem that reflects what is obtainable or happening in social structure. It could be social distortion, destruction, or disorderliness. It is violence against social principle laden or instructive mechanism and poses different challenges on opportunity to access social services, needs, or resources in societies. Structural violence can be targeted on socio-economic network or political system of a society in order to paralyse states well-being or sustenance. Distortion or dysfunctional social service distribution within a society causes structural violence that varies in outcomes. In a state of structural violence, norms and values that govern social system are distorted. Any social system characterises with structural violence are affected by prevailing political or socio-cultural system weaknesses. Some degrees of structural violence exist due to complex nature of some societies, in terms of values and cultural practices.

B. Physical Violence

This is a physical manifestation of violence. It could be direct or indirect application of force against the perceived oppositions. Physical violence manifest itself as terrorist attack, assassination, suicide bombing or mission, murder, militancy, war, etc. It encompasses destruction of lives and properties.

C. Ecological Violence

This is violence against natural existence of environment and its compositions through the activities of man or natural disaster. It manifests itself as pollution, ozone layer depletion, green house, gas flaring effect, etc. They occur through the interplays that take place within, between, or among environmental components. It manifests itself as environmental pollution or degradation that has negative effect on living organisms.

D. Psychological Violence

This could be physical but metaphysical or traumatic in nature. It happens as a result of feelings, thoughts, pressures, perceptions, injuries and traumas experienced by a person or group of people due to an event. Psychological violence has greater intense effects on human feelings, thinking, actions, health, personality, and physical appearances. Causes of psychological violence are war trauma, assassin attacks, murders, armed robbery, frustration, gender violence, etc.

E. Biological Violence

This is an artificial alteration of natural existence of a living organism, which may have greater intense effect on biological components due to certain impacts. Examples of biological violence are mutation, hybridization, cloning, inducement, abortion, etc. that improve or mal the growths or production of living off-springs. The biological violence could also occur when there is need to respond to stimulus by a living organism. Its effect could be on health or growth of a living organism.

F. Institutional/Socio-cultural Violence

This manifests itself as a systemic problem that could be political and socio-cultural in nature. It may be as a result of socio-cultural norms and values violation. According to Max Weber, "state political institutions have exclusive rights of violence uses and legitimatised. It is a collective violence that flows regularly from political process. It could occur due to socio-structural problems in societies. Its side effects are on governmental institutions or structures. Institutional violence manifests itself as structural violence, terrorism, militancy, political violence, assassination, etc.

It mostly occurs due to ideological or philosophical differences, in terms of religious belief (fanatism and fundamentalism), socialistic or capitalistic ideological practices.

G. Terrorism

Terrorism is an expression of violence against humanity. Chomsky (2002) states that “terrorism is a use of coercive means that aims at destroying certain population in an attempt to achieve political or religious domination, ethnic chauvinism or other aims. The acts of terrorism encompass guerrilla warfare, economic sabotage, political warfare, coups d’état, indiscriminate detonating of bombs, etc. They are systematic use of threats, suicide bombing, murdering, assassination or wanton destruction of lives and properties. Terrorism could or could not be limited to an environment, individuals or groups of individual. Some state actions could also be classified as terrorism or covert actions when the stakeholders or agencies exercise preponderance use of force or sequential deviance of coercive force that disregards underlying norms and values of the society with impunity in their domain (Dokun, 2005: 66). It could manifest itself through a tyrannical dictator or a totalitarian authority that subverts or manipulates legal structure to suit a purpose, or suppresses opponents. It entails violation of state sovereignty and abuse of law that caused political disobedience of the citizens.

3.2.1 Causes of Violence

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), the major factors causing violence are injustice, resources deprivation/exploitation, values/cultural diversity/discrimination, psychological needs/emotional feeling or torture, mis-management of information, perception, and agitation, which are discussed in this section. They propel violence expression within a social system.

1. Injustice

Injustice is the first responsible factor of violence. It supersedes any other causative factors of violence since it is not in human nature to allow anybody or colleagues to cheat or deny him/her opportunity or access to certain needs, be it, resources, psychological needs, information, cultural values, or belief systems. In other words, injustice to one is an injustice to others.

2. Values/Cultural Diversity/Discrimination

This is another vital factor responsible for violence. The values and cultural diversity crises are difficult to understand and manage. They are philosophical or ideological belief and practices. People could hardly give up or may ready to die on their belief system.

They see it as a link to God or Supreme Being, which must not be tampered or trampled upon by anybody, because, it depicts whom they are. Their values and cultural diversity represent their identities or ideological endow. They hardly part away with it, because, deny of their culture is the denied of their human nature or social life.

3. Psychological Needs/Emotional Feeling

This has to do with people's behaviour or attitude, which may not be physically manifested but affected the psyche of people, in terms of reasoning and reactions. For example, deny of a person love, social life, security of life, belongingness or friendship may result into aggression or threat of life because of frustration. It could be psychological or traumatic in nature.

4. Mis-management of Information

Information given or communication can be benevolent, malevolent, and ambivalent in nature. That is why proper management of information is very crucial and important to every human endeavour or relationship. Violence occurs most times due to lack of proper information or mis-management of information -in term of distortion, propaganda, or total gaps. It is a vital, intangible, and integral part of human. In order to avoid violence or escalation of violence, proper management of information is very vital. Mis-management of information can destroy the entire human society or race. Information is a crucial weapon of war, which helps in preventing war, achieving, or maintaining peaceful co-existence among the people.

5. Perception

This has to do with people's view, understanding, or interpretation of situations around them. Misperception of issues generates violence. In other words, not everybody sees things the same way. People view or see things from different perspectives which must be harmonised. The reflection of what a person should be may make people draw a wrong conclusion about him/her at a particular time. In terms of perception, there are many factors that influence the minds and actions of people. Information management, educational background, experience/exposure, religious/belief system, culture/ethnicity, gender, heredity, environment, etc. influence perceptions of people. All these factors and some others are directly or indirectly determined the response of people to a violent situation. In other words, to ensure peaceful and stability environment require tolerance or proper harmonisation of human perceptions.

5. Resources Deprivation/Exploitation:

Since the needs of human beings are insatiable and resources available to them may be inadequate make their needs to be competitive in nature. Violence over resources could easily be known and managed than any other violence generating factors. It occurs when two or more parties' interests are incompatible. Such interest may be economical, political, power, value or natural resources or any other agitations. It is the most common causative factors of violence. The wars between Israel and Egypt over Sues Canal, Israel and Palestinian on Gaza Street, United States of America and Panama overland, Niger Delta people over crude oil exploration, etc. are good examples. Most times, uneven distributions of resources serve as sources of crises.

3.4 Effect of Violence or Violent Conflict

The rates at which the violence is being exercised in societies today are no doubt unquantifiable from one place to the other. The disparity between the individuals' use of violence and state exclusive right of violence becomes imbalance for the justification of use of violence. In other words, the misuses of legitimate use of violence are now questioning the right of the state to prosecute violence against its citizens. Along the line, many citizens have lost their lives or become the victims of circumstances proliferating effects of violence on security and constitute threat of life, trauma, disunity, displacement of persons, underdevelopment, etc. Hence, the effects of violence are classified as: political and socio-structural disruption, Psychological pain and trauma, displacement of persons, underdevelopment, crime and arms proliferation, Human right violation, subversion, sabotage, social agitations, terrorism, etc., which are discussed in this section.

1. Political and socio-structural disruption

There is no doubt, the effects of violence on political and socio-structural system of societies on many occasions today have caused disunity, distrust, disagreement, agitation and total disharmony in different places. Many societies experiencing violence effects are put in disarrayed and lacked of mutual understanding which is the basic need for peace and development goals. Their socio-political structures are disrupted and constituting insecurity. Security for both the state and individuals are disrupted.

2. Psychological pain and trauma

Violence is psychologically painful and traumatic in nature. It is usually proliferated thuggery, assassination, weapons, armed robberies, and anarchy. Every violence combatant or ex-combatant in societies is a potential element of destruction because of the trauma effect of violence they experienced. They are always transferred their frustration and aggression on their society. They live a miserable life and constituted threat of life and insecurity to any environment they are living without disarmed, rehabilitated, and reintegrated.

3. Displacement of persons

This could either be internally displaced of persons or refugee emancipations from another country. Their displacements due to violence situations are always be in haste, unprepared and very dangerous to the security of life and property of both the host society and those who were displaced. Their displacement owing to violence is always unprepared of flights, and therefore, lacked social or human security they need for survival. Along the line, they engage in many atrocities to survive and become some levels of security threats to the host societies. They are sets of people with different characters and vulnerable to all circumstances. Their living conditions encourage the spread of diseases. Those who displaced are solely relied donor agencies and host societies for their basic needs, which make them directly or indirectly lazy.

4. Crime and arms proliferation

Every violence situation is naturally producing the feelings of insecurity in societies, which are as well directly or indirectly constituted hoodlums and non-state actor phenomenal. It is a situation where many people would acquire arms and weapons unlawfully to take vengeance or protect themselves from all forms of insecurity. It directly or indirectly encourages trafficking of arms and weapons and makes the world unable to control the traffickers effectively.

5. Human right violation

Every violent situation begets violations of human rights, because, the rules, or norms and values of society would be ignored. Many people would be abused, molested, murdered, and deprived of their rights. Since violence situation is always counterproductive and runs counter to the fundamental of human rights, the movement of the people would be restricted. Inhuman and degrading treatments to extent of torture would be prevalent.

6. Subversion

This has to do with unlawful activities of individuals or organizations seeking ways to discredit or overthrow an establishment or government. Their unlawful activities include illegal acquisition of weapons, drugs trafficking, hoarding of basic provisions for society, encouragement of breakdown of law and order through protest, and general civil disobedience.

7. Sabotage

This is another unlawful act committed by individuals or groups with aim of embarrassing or undermining a constituted authority, government, or security system. The acts of sabotage are always targeted on essential facilities and services like public companies, buildings, and transportation systems. It also involves the acts of kidnapping, terrorism, destructions of life and property.

8. Social Agitations

This could be through student unions or labour protests, political, ethno-religious protests. It can as well involve militancy or general civil disturbances due to loss of patience and trust in institution or government. In such agitations like these unlawful use of dangerous weapons would be abound. Ethno-religious bias or sentiments undermine the social system. Social integration would be lacked or jeopardized when sentiments are the order of the day.

9. Terrorism

Insurrection is a rebellion against the state or government. In other words, terrorism is an act of violence or intimidation that uses systematic attacks to ventilate opinion or generate attention of the state or state actors by some individual or groups. The resistance movements engage in armed struggle to create a crisis in an environment. Terrorism involves acquiring of firearms, ammunitions, and explosive substances illegally.

10. Underdevelopment

The effect of violence in society is always encouraged underdevelopment and involves destruction and disruptions of social components and features. It is usually proliferated increase in unemployment, youth restiveness, gangsterism, robbery, fraud, drug trafficking and abuses, assassinations.

3.5 Preventive Measures/Management of Violence

The preventive measures are the necessary steps in ensuring peace and security in every society. The need for this stems from the fact that no development indices can exist where there is violence. Hence, the following measures are the preventive and management indices for peace and development to prevailed in society experiences violence

1. Rule of law and justice

It is a known fact that wherever there is rule of law and justice violence cannot distort the social system. Many of the victims of violence deserve fairness and justice to prevent or overcome violent situations. The post-violence situation needs rule of law to strengthen and re-structure their social system. Every violator of law and order should be prosecuted base on the law of the land and ensure rule of law is supreme. There should be equality before the law and facilitation of orientation towards justice for peace to reign.

2. Early warning signal and preventive diplomacy mechanism

This should be incorporated in every post-violence situation. The analysis of early warning signals provides an insight into any emergence of violence. An effective early warning system combines historical/socio-political information to forecast the dynamics of any developing conflict. It is an effective mechanism that addresses any traces of crisis. It serves as a preventive diplomacy to temper any perceived conflict-generating activities that may lead to violence. It is also helped in decision-making of peace initiation. It is an overall process of addressing the perceived emergence of conflicts or violence. It encompasses activities that prevent conflict from escalating to violence. Its activities include confidence-building, fact finding, prevention of armed insurrection, etc.

3. Civic education

There is need for good civic educational system in post-violence situation. Every citizenry need access to good educational system and should be the priority of society before and after any violence situation. The need for educational system that improved the thinking and the minds of people toward progress must not be underestimated, because, it would instill in citizens a sense of national consciousness, cohesion, belongingness, duty, responsibility and respect for human rights of the citizens. It would also produce leadership roles with appropriate knowledge and genuine attitude for the future leaders. The knowledge gained through civic education will instill in citizens the respect for law and order, and the willingness to take part in developmental activities.

4. Human security and infrastructural facilities

The emphasis post-violence society should be on social/human security that ensures basic necessity of life and not on traditional or uniform men security. The concept of security has beyond a fundamental military activity that aims at protecting territorial boundaries and a nation's sovereignty. Human security encompasses the protection of lives and property; it is a pre-condition for people's improvement, protection of human rights and provision for basic human needs, which are very crucial to every society for the peace to reign. It guarantees absence of fear, threat, anxiety, tension, and the apprehension of losing life, liberty, property, goals, values, and so on. Human security is very essential to any sustainable development processes, particularly, in the less developed nations. It is, therefore, highly needed in post-conflict Liberia.

5. Re-integration and re-settlement

There is need for reintegration and resettlement of all the displaced populations, sacked communities, and ex-combatants in post-violence situation. After the disarmament and demobilization programmes and rehabilitation, the next programmes that need to be carried out are reintegration and resettlement of the displaced populations, sacked communities, and ex-combatants for peace and security. This is because the un-reintegrated population constitutes insecurity to the social system after violence if their case is not well handled.

6. Gender sensitivity and women empowerment

There is need for gender sensitivity and women empowerment in every society. Any society where women are less educated, have less access to good productive resources, and occupy no decision making positions compared to their male counterparts always faces some hindrances in development processes, because, there are roles in which both the male and female genders must play for their society to progress. For example, many violence situations have always brought about the untold suffering conditions of women. They participated as victims, actors and fending for their families during violence situations.

7. Good governance

In post-violence situations, good governance is a necessary measure to prevent any re-occurrence of violence. The essence of governance is to guarantee a congenial environment where aspirations and lawful activities can be carried out freely without intimidation or any harassment in order to achieve stability and development. It is a pragmatic channel of attaining sustainable peace and tranquility.

Diamond (2004:222) avers that good governance is the ability or willingness to apply public resources effectively to generate public good and benefit to the entire community. This includes physical structure in terms of roads, bridges, ports, sanitation, potable water, electric power, and telecommunication. Others are public transport, social, economic and political infrastructures like schools, clinics, markets, courts, vaccination programme, and improved agricultural techniques, neutral and capable state bureaucracy. All these are required dedicated and charismatic leaders, transparency, and accountability, rule of law, public participation, and dialogue in policy formulation and implementation.

8. Job Opportunity and poverty alleviation programme

There is need for massive employment in post-violence situation. The unemployed citizens need to be gainfully and actively engaged in productive activities that can prevent re-occurrence of violence. Many able men and women that are jobless must get something doing to prevent previous precarious situations. If not employ, such people can be used to undermine the goals of peace and development in post-violence. They need to be engaged in full productive activities so as prevent them from becoming dissidents that help other violence perpetrators to prosecute violence against their societies. There should be effective and reliable poverty alleviation programmes, where the unemployed members of the society can acquire skills on vocational jobs and agricultural practices. There should be provision for entrepreneur skills.

9. Peacebuilding

This is always being in short and long term programmes. It is a required measure for removing the causes of violence and a way of strengthening the social structures of any society. Peacebuilding is a post-violence measure that forestalls the eruption of violence in future. It strengthens the socio-political structures of any society. It is an aggregate of actions and measures that need to be taken after the cessation of violence, and to prevent renewal of such event.

4.0 CONCLUSION

This unit discussed the meaning of violence, its types and causes with the effect and measures to prevent and manage the violence situation successfully in societies. It is noticeable that misconception of violence for conflict or vice-versa becomes a fundamental problem to the millions of people that require better clarifications. In other words, what should be avoided is violence or violent conflict that is destructive in nature. This is because; a costliest peace is cheaper than the cheapest violence.

5.0 SUMMARY

The unit has defined and explained violence, its types, causes, features, and attributes. There is no doubt on this course that the students would be able to discuss the course and manage any kinds of violence occur in their environment.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. What is violence or violent conflict?
2. Discuss the violence types and its causes.
3. Differentiate between the attributes/features of conflict and violence.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Adedoyin, A. 2007. *Urban Violence and Security : A Course Material and Guides*; In National Open University of Nigeria, Ahmadu Bello Way, Victoria Island, Lagos, Nigeria.
- Albert, I. O. (2001). *Introduction to Third-party Intervention in Community Conflict Peaceful Transformations Forum*: in association with John Archers (publisher) Limited Dugbe, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Albert, I.O. et al. (1994). *Urban Violence in Contemporary Africa*, Some theoretical Explanations. In Albert, I. O. et.al (1994); *Urban Management and Urban Violence in Africa*, Proceedings of International Symposium on Urban Management and Urban Violence in Africa, First edition Vol. 1 and 2 IFRA (Publisher) Ibadan.
- Dokun, O. P. (2005). *Conflict and Context of Conflict Resolution*, Obafemi Awolowo University of Press Limited, Ile-Ife, Nigeria.
- Domenach, J. M. (1975). The Ubiquity of Violence. *International Social Science, Journal* Vol. 30 (4):Pp717-726.
- Tamuno, T.N. (1991) *Peace and Violence in Nigeria: the Panel on Nigeria Since Independence History Project*, University of Ibadan, Ibadan

UNIT 5 CONFLICT ANALYSIS

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
- 3.1 Meaning/Definition of Conflict Analysis
- 3.2 Stakeholders and Issues Analysis
- 3.4 Conflict Mapping and Tracking
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

It is an established fact that conflict exist at all levels of human interaction either at intra-personal, interpersonal, intra-group, inter group or at communal or communities, national and international levels. Hence, this makes imperative for a conflict intervener or management practitioner, peace scholar and student to acquire necessary knowledge and skills required to gain an insight on hidden of conflict issues. The ranging issues from causes of conflict, stages/phases of conflict, the stakeholders (parties in a conflict), and conflict analytical tools and techniques necessary for proper understanding of conflict management in view of proffering sustainable solution to conflict situations. The conflict analysis is accompanied by conflict mapping and tracking, which are very important at a giving conflict management effort for a clear picture of what is happening? what is at stake? and what could be done to manage conflict situation successfully?

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- define concept of conflict analysis;
- explain the meaning of stakeholders, categorise stakeholders and itemize criteria for determining pre-intervention state of conflict analysis;
- define conflict mapping and tracking;
- identify conventions used in mapping relationships; and
- enumerate different conflict analytical tools.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Definition of Conflict Analysis

Conflict analysis is a critical review, interpretation and explanation of what is happening and recording what was observed in a conflicting situation. It is a process by which the root causes, dynamics, issues, and – other – fundamental factors of conflict are examined, reviewed and unraveled through the use of various mechanisms for proper and better understanding of conflict situation. It enables peace expert to intervene and ascertain opportunity abound to gather necessary data or information that facilitate easy ways of bringing parties involved together and reveal a dependable or reliable effective direction of choice of strategies and actions that successfully intervene and terminate the conflict.

3.2 Definition of Stakeholder

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), the stakeholders of every conflict situation are identifiable actors or parties involved. They are the determinant factors of every conflict management's outcome. Stakeholders are the parties involved or conflicting parties that influence every situation of conflict significantly, and most time, vulnerable to it. They help in determining the needed peace constituents or peace generating factors by throwing more light on conflict rudiments. Conflicting stakeholders are the determinant of peace and stability attainment in conflict management. They are classified into primary, secondary and shadow or external parties. Analysis of conflicting stakeholders helps to identify core conflicting actors, their subordinates, shadow parties and their perceived incompatible goals or interest that are clashing. It reveals positions, interests, and the needs of the conflictuals or parties involved.

3.2.1 Stakeholders Analysis

a. Primary Stakeholders

These are physical identifiable parties that are directly involved or seeing physically at the surface of every conflict scenario. They are deeply involved in conflict matters than their secondary or shadow parties. This makes them classify active participants. Reasonable conflict analysts or interveners must be able to identify and determine their position, underlying issue, interest, or vested interest, value, perception, needs and role play.

The kinds of power or influence they have should be well known or established and understood by the interveners, whether it is symmetrical or asymmetrical power, reference or reward power, etc. The exact interests, goals, and needs of parties involved must be well established by the interveners or conflict analysts. Nevertheless, other actors or stakeholders in conflict situations also need to be considered and identified.

b. Secondary Stakeholders

These are subordinate parties in a conflict situation. They also determine or play significant roles in influencing the existing conflict situations. The secondary stakeholders can be individual(s), government agencies, non-governmental organisations or officers, institutions, political parties, civil societies, religious membership, law enforcement agencies, or any other security apparatus, etc. They are the recipients of conflict end results and even vulnerable to it sometimes, if their cares are not taken. Just as African adage says “when the elephants fight, it is the grass that suffered”.

c. Shadow Parties or External Actors

These stakeholders can be referred as un-foreseeing or unseen forces, parties, or principalities in a conflict situation. Or better still, unseen hands or entities that play intruder roles in conflict scenario (in terms of intensification or proliferation of conflict matters). They are most difficult to identify in conflict scenarios, and can hardly involve directly in conflict situation. They influence conflict matters either positively or negatively due to their vested interests. The shadow or external stakeholders are sometimes donor agencies, international organisations, private sectors or individual, business men and women, religious organisations or fundamentalists, etc. What makes them so relevant in conflict management is their vested interest. They provide or mobilise supports or resources for the parties involved in a conflict. They could hardly be trusted because of their vested interests or needs that may be difficult to identify. Friends, family, relatives, colleagues in the offices, clergy, leaders, wife, husband, brother, sister, in-law, neighbour, security agent, etc. can serve as shadow parties in conflict situations.

3.2.2 Five (5) Elements Required to Structure Analysis of Stakeholders

Relationship- What is the interaction between the stakeholders?

Agenda/Power -What are the stakeholders’ needs?

Needs - Which are their needs opposing and overlapping one another?

- Action** - What are the actions undertaken by stakeholders to promote peace or conflict? What is the cumulative power of actors for peace and conflict?

3.3 Pre-Intervention Conflict Analysis

Entering into a conflict situation by a conflict intervener is often unpredictable task that requires a critical and careful conflict analysis. It is not easy and enough to just note the positions of the stakeholders (parties) in the conflict, the intervener must have a thorough understanding of their interests, values and needs at stake. Hence, the following model suggests a way out for the intervener in gathering data and increasing certainty on how to constructively handle the issue and conflicting parties. It is the responsibility of an intervener to develop a comprehensive picture of the conflict situation by identifying its key element. The pre-intervention information gathered usually lead the intervener on certain direction, and suggest ways on how to engage the parties involved in reducing tensions and work together to find solution to their problems on one hand. Any additional information or data collected during the course of intervention must be incorporated in the analysis of conflict. This would determine why an issue is proving hard to manage and suggest an alternative approach to the management of such conflict.

1. History of the Conflict

It is very important for a conflict analyst to understand the significant events that happened in the past between or among the parties. This would reveal their genesis of conflict, and whether they have had previous conflicts. The history would also enable the intervener to ask the following questions: 1. what was the pattern of their relationship? 2. were there any recent changes in their relationship? 3. was their conflict abated at one time before re-escalating? 4. what past efforts have been made to resolve their conflicts? and 5. why were they failed? Preferring answers may likely require the visiting of local, state, and native archives for documentary evidence. Oral interviews may also be used to gather necessary information.

2. Context of Conflict

It is also necessary to know how the parties involved had currently trying to manage their differences, and at what where were they attempted to manage their conflict? That is, the socio-economic and political environment of the conflict, as well as the dimensions of external situations (state, sub-regional, and global) is part of the determinants of conflict outcomes.

How did the parties involved communicate and make decisions in the past? Similarly, the positions and underlying interests of the parties involved are crucial to the successful management of conflict. What are the values and perceptions of other parties? What is the power influence of the parties involved? and what are the interests, goals, or needs of the parties involved? Are they sharing common views?

3. Power Relations

This has to do with the ability of the parties involved to influence or control conflict events, which could be in form of physical strength, status, control of resources, persuasive ability, support of allies, and so on. There are two major types of power that can be exercised by either of the parties in conflict which are: asymmetric power -which is usually associated with the violent conflict. The other is symmetric power. It identifies with accommodation, consideration, constructiveness, or positive disposition to a conflict situation. The questions under such situation are usually on power relation, such as: is there balance of power between or among the conflicting parties? What is/are their source(s) of power? What are the resources at the disposals? How often parties involved did use their power and what are the consequences of such power? Are there any untapped power bases of parties involved? What method of peace process is suitable for the success of intervention? The roles played by the parties involved in a conflict must be ascertained. One should know whether they align with one another or neutral. Or when and how can be parties involved in peace agencies or organizations' process of conflict management. This cannot be underestimated.

4. The Issues in Conflict

- a. What are the primary issues identified by the parties involved?
- b. Are there hidden or secondary issues not stated by the parties involved that are needed to be identified?
- c. What kinds of intervention procedures are necessary once the issues are identified?
- d. Is their conflict genuine or it is a mere symptom of unresolved conflict(s).
- e. In the latter or former, how many times and efforts must be expended on a conflict before one can reach or arrive at a reasonable and sustainable resolution.

5. Intervention Steps

It is the responsibility of the intervener to determine the most effective and reliable conflict management strategy to adopt as a matter of urgency, and know the situations whether it should be long or short time programmes. For example, if the conflict is at a violent stage, definitely, the intervener may be compelled to adopt some violence reduction strategies to reduce the rate of likelihood casualty that may arise.

6. Stages of Conflict

The intervener must ascertain whether the conflict is escalating or de-escalating, and ask why?

Timing:

- a. Is to ascertain the right time for the intervention.
- b. Determine the most profitable and successful time for intervention.
- c. To know how the parties are likely to benefit from immediate intervention.

7. Possible Options of Intervention/Management

This has to do with:

- a. the level of knowledge and understanding of the parties involved that an alternative mean of management need to be considered if the first one failed.
- b. the level of parties' awareness of one another's alternative or option strategies.
- c. the examination of the efforts made by the conflicting parties in the accomplishment of their options.
- d. the evaluation of the realistic nature of the parties involved.

3.4 Conflict Mapping and Tracking Conflict Mapping

Maps are used for a variety of purposes to understand conflict situation better, to ascertain where their power lies, to examine conflict clearly from one viewpoint, to look for openings (way out) or new strategies, to know where their allies or potential allies are placed, to find a niche, to evaluate what has been done and for many other reasons.

Wehr (1979:18) describes conflict mapping as the first step in intervening to the management of a particular conflict. Conflict mapping can also be defined as graphical representation of the conflict in which the conflicting parties are placed in relation to the situation on ground.

Conflict Tracking

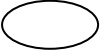
Conflict tracking involves monitoring, observation and recording of the trend of change and continuity in the conflict process. It is very important for a person keeping track of the conflict to pay attention to the details about the issues and circumstances around the conflict.


3.4.1 Conventional Conflict Mapping System.

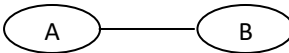
According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), in analysis of conflict and management, the conflict mapping system is another essential mechanism that needed to be carried out by the interveners. It involves the use of certain symbols that describe or represent a given conflict situation. Conflict mapping is a graphic or symbolic presentation of a given conflict situation. It is drawn in a way that every party involved in a conflict situation is systematically placed or represented by forming a bond. It helps to identify those who are primary, secondary and shadow parties, or stakeholders in a conflict situation.

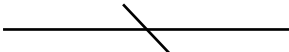
In other words, having a better understanding of conflicting parties' position, interest, and needs is crucial to conflict management. The kinds of power or influence exercising by the conflicting parties would be known in mapping system, that is, whether it is symmetrical or asymmetrical. Their relationship and alliance formations by their bond would signify different spheres of influence and power differential; whether it is cordial, intermittent, discordant, good, or bad. More importantly, the mapping system must be well drawn and interpreted by the conflict interveners for positive end results or outcomes.

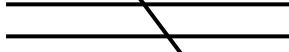
Legend is the symbol used to map a conflict situation.

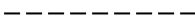
 : The circles represent stakeholders in a conflict situation, most especially, the primary, secondary, and shadow parties or stakeholders. In conflict mapping, the sizes of the circles represent or depict and reflect the level of power differentials and influence exercise by stakeholders.

 : The double straight parallel or horizontal lines between the two circles mean alliance formation.

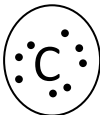
 : A straight parallel or horizontal line between the two circles represents good relationship.

 : A straight parallel or horizontal line with a cross diagonal line in-between the two circles means a broken relationship.

 : Double straight parallel or horizontal lines with a cross diagonal line between the two circles means a broken alliance

 : A broken straight parallel or horizontal line between the two circles means an intermittent relationship.

WWWWWWWW : A zigzag straight parallel or horizontal line between the two circles means a conflict situation.

 : A concentrated dotted points circle with a letter "C" at the centre means shadow parties or external bodies in a conflict situation.

3.5 Conflict Analytical Tools

Conflict mapping tracking and analysis processes are the essential ingredients required in pre-third party intervention for the collection of essential and comprehensive information/data by a mediator or conflict intervener to discover purposeful tool(s) and techniques that can be used or adopted to address the needs in a conflict.

Through such data, Moore (1996:114) notes, that a mediator should:

- develop a mediation plan or management strategy that meets the requirements of the specific situation and the needs of all parties involved.
- avoid entering into a conflict management with a conflict management procedure without sure of the stage of development or level of intensity that the dispute has reached.
- operate with an accurate information or data base that prevents unnecessary proliferation of conflicts due to misinformation or communication gap, mis-perception or misleading data.
- clarify issues and interests at most important.
- identify the key people involved in a conflict and the dynamics of their relationships.

As it was mentioned above, some of the techniques or tools are familiar or may be unfamiliar. However, they have been tried and used repeatedly and successfully by some people on different types of conflicts in the past. In some cases, groups have adopted them to some particular needs, or based them on the perceptions of people who have worked on them. The available tools or techniques are:

A. Timeline

Timeline is a graph that shows events plotted against a particular time-scale. Timeline shows different views of history on a conflict situation. It helps to clarify and understand perception of the events and facilitate easy identification of events that are most important to the either side. It lists dates in years, month, or day, depending on the scale and depicting events in chronological order. In conflict situation, some groups of people are having different experiences and perceptions. They see and understand the conflict in quite different ways. They have different histories and opposing sides of conflict that they attach contrast emotional positions.

Using the Timeline

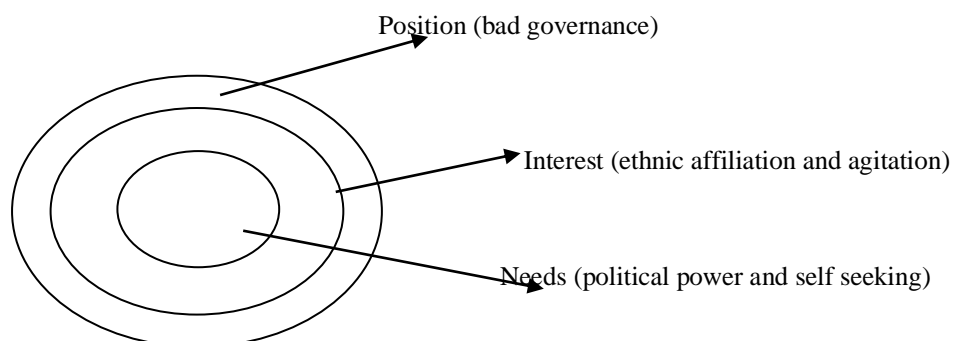
The timeline is not a research tool per say as it was mentioned above, but a way to prompt discussion and learning. It is usually used early in a conflict management process with either analytical tools or strategy building. It is as well used when the people disagree about events or don't know each other's history, or as a way of helping people to accept the perspective as part of the "truth". It is as well used by parties involved and shared with each other.

Issues Analysis

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), issues analysis is another task that must be done and should not be taken for granted in conflict management. The issues at stake in conflict situations need to be identified, understood, and well treated, if the interveners or managers would achieve positive or successful end results. There are many analysis' tools in conflict management that guarantee successful outcomes. Among them are conflict tree, conflict mapping, actor-issue proliferations, and avocado/onion/doughnut or tomato analysis tool, etc.

Onion/Doughnut/Avocado or Tomato tool

This tool states that every conflict situation is always be in three layers, which are positions, interests, and needs. Conflict analysis tool (issues analysis) compares every conflict situation with onion bud, doughnut, avocado, and tomato that has three layers; which are known as epicarp, mesocarp and endocarp. Meaning, conflict situations are in different layers. The surface or outer layer is called position, that is, the statement made by the conflicting parties that may be different from their actual target or interest and needs, which they must attained. In other words, the three identified layers that needed to be unravelled by conflict analysts or interveners before a conflict situation could be well managed or successfully managed are positions, interests and needs. The outer layer (first layer) is known as position, while peripheral layer (second layer) is called interest and inner layer (third layer) is identified as needs. However, position of the parties involved may the same, but their interests and needs can hardly the same, because, their interests and needs are developed out of fears or fears of unknown and un-trust.



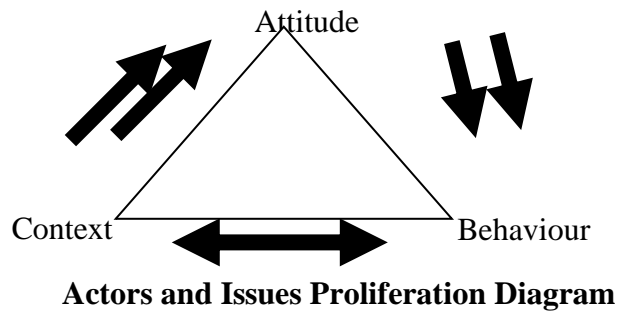
Issues Analysis Diagram

Or better still, before a conflict situation could be properly and amicably managed, the needs of the conflicting parties must be well understood and probably addressed, because, they could hardly be traded off.

Actors and Issues Proliferation

According to Mitchell (1988) every conflict phenomenon has three inter-related components, that is, conflict behaviour, attitude, and context. They appear in triangular forms from within, or shapes like triangles at the centre point of a conflict situation. Conflict behaviour, attitude, and context are found of triangulating round the perceived contentious issues. The contentious situation is the perceived incompatible goals or values between or among parties involved. In other words, the issues and actors proliferation is the multiplication of parties and issues involved in a conflict scenario. Whenever the issues or actors' proliferation is not well handled or treated, it would degenerate into larger conflict, because, as issues are proliferated; the actors or parties involved in a conflict situation would also get proliferated. The issues generating factors in a conflict situation need to be well treated, handled or dealt with carefully, although, not at the immediate environment; in order to prevent further proliferation or multiplication of actors and issues in conflict situation. Causes of issues and actors' proliferations could be resources, values, psychological needs, mis-management of information or wrong perception, mis-conception, etc. However, the attitudes of conflicting parties are sometimes depict or reflect their perceptions, and whenever a negative attitude is developed towards certain issues due to perceived frustration suffered by the parties involved, or competitions between the parties involved reinforce by incompatible issues or values, then, the end results would be conflict.

The conflicting behaviours are the actions taken by the parties involved in a conflict situation, which would be directed toward perceived oppositional forces. The conflicting parties' attitudes would be transformed into behaviours and behaviours metamorphose into aggression. That is, as attitude undergoing changes, behaviour would also change. Or whenever the attitude of the conflicting parties produces negative reactions, its accompany behaviours or actions will be negative, and finally lead to confrontation. This means the attitudes, behaviours and contexts reinforce the actions that produce conflict. Hence, the actors and issues proliferation analysis helps the interveners or conflict analysts to identify or remove any perceived underlying factors of conflict. It helps to develop positive attitudes or behaviours toward conflict management. In other words, the negative attitude engenders negative behaviour that creates or sustains conflict.



Force – Field Analysis

This tool can be used to identify the different forces influencing a conflict situation. It is used to analyse both positive and negative forces in a conflict. Whenever action is being taken to bring about change, there will be other forces that are either supporting or hindering what interveners are trying to achieve. This tool offers a way of identifying positive and negative forces that try to know or assess their strengths and weaknesses. It can also help you to see more clearly what is maintaining the status-quo.

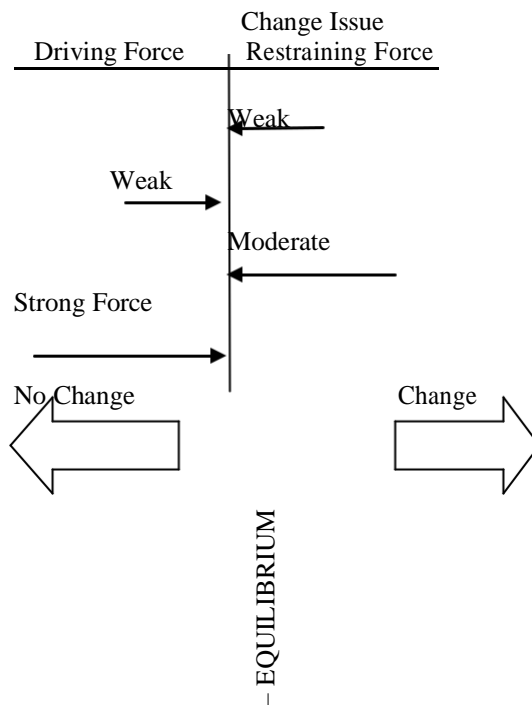
How to use the tool

The Force Field Analysis was developed by an American Social Psychologist Kurt Lewin (1951) as a useful tool built on the premise that forces are often driven by human habits, customs, and attitudes that affect the change process.

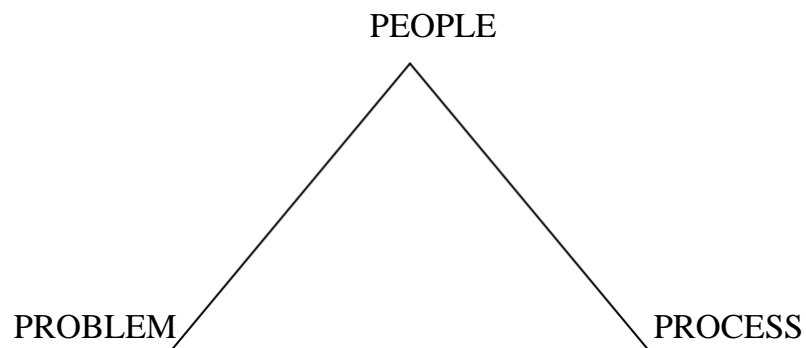
- i. First and foremost, one would begin by naming specific objective that determines the action one intend to take or change the desire to achieve. Hence, objective would be written at the top of the page and drawn a line down to the centre of the page.
- ii. At first side of the line, list all the forces that seem to be supporting and assisting the action or change of the happening. At the space next to the line, draw an arrow towards the centre at varying length, and the thickness of each arrow indicates the relative strength of force between the parties involved, which means, they are pointing at the direction of the desired change.
- iii. On the other side of the line, list all the forces that seem to retrain or hinder the desired action or minimize in some ways negative force in order to facilitate increased in the likelihood of the desired change happening.

- iv. At this stage, one would examine the plan of action and make modifications in strategy, and if necessary, build upon the strengths of the positive forces and try to reduce or remove the effects of negative forces.

Force Field Diagram



PPP MODEL



PEOPLE

- Who are the individuals and groups directly involved?
- Who will be affected by or can influence the outcome?
- What leadership and structure does each group have?
- How does each view the situation?
- How is each affected?
- What particular feelings, issues, etc. characterize each?
- What are the main discrepancies in perception?
- What communication and connection links does each have with the other?

PROCESS

- What has been the sparking issue?
- Is there a historic pattern to their interaction?
- What is the process to follow?
- As the conflict developed, what additional problems or issues emerged?
- What degree of polarization is in between each party?
- What are the activities of each party that intensify their conflict?
- What roles would moderate individuals and groups?

PROBLEM

- What are the interests, needs, and values of each party?
- What do they propose or pursue to meet them?
- What are the shared basic needs underline their conflict? (Security? Self esteem? Food? Rights? Land? Etc.)
- What are the minimal essential outcomes each party would satisfy with?
- What are the basic areas of agreement and disagreement?
- What are the resources available for dealing with conflict?
- At what stage is their conflict?

The tool can be used to analyse conflict by proffering answers to the several questions above. If the reasonable answers would be proffered and conflict intervener would be able to know the stages of conflict in of terms the parties involved, their positions, basic needs, values, perceptions and differences. Having known all these, one will be able to decide on the method or process to be adopted in facilitating reconciliation (peace agreement) between the aggrieved parties and bring about enduring/sustainable peace to the society previously troubled.

DPT MODEL

- D – Diagnosis:** Investigating the history of sickness
- P – Progress:** Establish the present state of success and where it could be in future.
- T – Therapy:** The prescription or treatment.

The analytical tool is based on the premise that individual or society in conflict is sick, and therefore, needs a doctor. That is, there is a direct relationship between conflict and human physical, emotional, and spiritual well being. Negative conflict reduces overall capacity to build a healthy society. Hence, to build a healthy society requires the conflict manager efforts with concerned authority or parties involved. This would bring about drastic reduction or removal of perceived sickness and proffer or prescribe lasting sustainable treatment for the sickness. Having carried out a proper diagnosis/examination of cause and trend of conflict, an appropriate measure/treatment should be adopted for the removal or eradication of sicknesses and its cause.

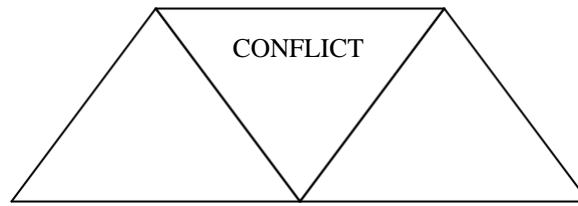
PILLAR ANALYSIS

This is a graphic tool that is built on the premise that some situations are not really stable, but are being “held up” by a range of factors or forces, which are the “pillars”. If the pillars can be identified and then find ways of removing the situations or minimizing their effects, one will be able to topple a negative situation and replace it with the positive one.

How to use this tool:

The tool can be used through the following trends below:

- i. Identification of unstable situation by showing an inverted triangle standing on one point.
- ii. Identification of the forces or factors that are likely maintaining the situation and show the “pillars” on the either side of the triangle.
- iii. Putting into consideration how each of the pillars may have been weakened or removed conflict situation by listing the strategies briefly for each pillar.
- iv. Consideration of a stable situation would replace unstable one.



An Example of a Pillar Analysis

4.0 CONCLUSION

With the discussions above, one can now see that conflicts can be prevented or managed constructively. It is therefore important for a conflict manager or intervener to equip him/herself and be versatile in conflict analysis techniques or tools in order to afford him/her the opportunity to understanding any conflict situation, and know its stakeholders, causes, parties views, perceptions, interests, or values before embarking on conflict resolution/management process that would bring about positive and sustainable peace.

5.0 SUMMARY

This unit defined/explained conflict analysis, stakeholders, and their criteria in determining each stakeholder. The unit also defined conflict mapping and tracking, and showed conventions used in mapping relationships. Different tools of conflict analysis that facilitate proper and better understanding of conflict situation and types of relationship exist between/among the stakeholders were extensively discussed.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

- 1i. What is the conflict analysis?
- ii. Discuss any four (4) conflict analysis tools.
- 2i. Define the conflict mapping and tracking system.
- ii. Draw or show different conventions used in mapping of the relationship and clarify their meanings.
- 3i. Who are the stakeholders?
- ii. Explain different categories of stakeholders.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2020) & (2015). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Azar, Edward (1990). *The Management of Protracted Social Conflict: Theory and Cases*. Worcester: Dartmouth.
- Burton, John (1990). *Human Needs Theory*. London: Macmillan.
- Fisher, Simon, et al. (2000). *Working With Conflict: Skills and Strategies for Action*. London: Zed.
- Mitchell, Chris (1988). *The Structure of International Conflict*. London, Macmillan.
- Otite, Onigu and Albert, Isaac A. (1999). *Community Conflict in Nigeria*. Ibadan: Spectrum, Academic Associates Peace Works.

MODULE 2 UNDERSTANDING WAR

Unit 1	Meaning/Definition of War/Hostility, Causes, and Types of War
Unit 2	Theories of War
Unit 3	Contemporary and Traditional African War
Unit 4	Rules of Engagement in War Situation
Unit 5	Impacts of War on Society

UNIT 1 MEANING/DEFINITION OF WAR/HOSTILITY, CAUSES, AND TYPES OF WAR

CONTENTS

1.0	Introduction
2.0	Objectives
3.0	Main Content
3.1	Meaning/Definition of War/Hostility
3.2	Causes of War and Types
3.3	Conflict and War
4.0	Conclusion
5.0	Summary
6.0	Tutor-Marked Assignment
7.0	References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

In an ideal situation of things, the nations or states are expected to be at peace with one another. But since the time immemorial, the world has always been turned into battle field either with the group of people, nations, or states. Many have rose against one another due to issues like values or beliefs, and compete over scarce or limited resources. The need for these values and resources degenerated into series of non-violence or violent conflict due to lack of effective regulatory system or poor conflict management mechanisms adopted by people in the past. The war was not only prevalent in nineteenth and twenty first century, it is more violent and destructive, which has continued to drain the energy of manpower and resources. This has been the problem that disintegrated many countries or states. However, the protracted nature of the war and hostility, cause and types of war, the relationship between the war and conflict would be examined in this unit.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- define and explain what is war
- explain war and state of hostility
- list and explain causes of war or reasons for war and types
- state relationship between conflict and war.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Meaning/Definition of War

War like any other social phenomenon, has various definitions which are often masked by a particular political philosophical stance paraded by authors. The Black's Law Dictionary taking a cue from *Gitlow V Kiely* D.C.N.Y., 447. 2d 279,233 define war as a hostile contention by means of armed forces, carried on between nations, states, rulers or between citizens in the same nation or state. War was defined by Webster's Dictionary as a state of open and declares hostile armed conflict between the states or nations over a period of certain violent conflict. It captures a particular rationalistic account of war and warfare, that is, war needs to be explicitly declared between the states at war. In reference to the Webster's definition, J. J. Rousseau opines that "war is constituted by a relation between things, and not by persons...war then is a relation, not between man and man, but between state and state..."

In Social Contract school, Cicero defines war broadly as "a contention by force". Hugo Grotius adds that "war is the state of contenting parties, considered as such". Thomas Hobbes notes that war is also an attitude. It is a state of affairs existing even while its operations are not continued". Denis Diderot comments that war is a conclusive and violent disease of the body of politic". Karl Von Clausewitz, war is a continuation of politics by other means, and so on.

The Oxford Dictionary defines war as "any active hostility or struggle between living beings; or conflict between opposing forces or principles. The Military Historian, John Keegan, offers a useful characterisation of the political – rationalist theory of war in his *History of War*. It is assumed to be an orderly affair in which states are involved, which there are declared beginnings and expected ends; easily identifiable combatants, and high levels of obedience by subordinates.

As it was noted above, one can see that there are several schools of thought on war's nature other than being political – rationalist account. The students of war must be careful, not to incorporate too narrow or normative account of war. In a nutshell, each definition has its strengths and weaknesses, but often, the culmination of the writer's broad philosophical views or positions about the war. Prior to the late sixteenth century, there exists a drawn distinction between just and unjust war geared towards satisfying the theological preponderance of issues. St. Augustine who lived between 354 and 430 AD writes just wars as those avenge injuries when the nations or city against action which suppose to be directed enemies but neglected either to punish for wrongs committed by citizens or to restore what has been unjustly taken by it. Such kind of war is undoubtedly just, and God himself ordains.

Definition of War

War can simply be defined as a situation of armed conflict consequent upon hostile relations with the objective of producing the winner and the vanquished in the pursuit of an objective or objectives for which the war is fought.

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), war is a contest between the two or more parties/states, which could be through armed groups or forces. The purpose of the contest and contestant groups is either to vanquish or impose one party's condition for the peace to reign. War is a struggle that compels extensive scale of obedience. According to Hall, "there is a war when the differences between some parties or states reach a point where both the parties resort to force, and, one party desires to excise violence on others. In other words, relationship between the war and humanitarian law compels the wars to be prosecuted through certain use of regulatory violence (Yakubu, 2002:52). A war is said to have been taken place when at least 500 armed groups enter a city or state of origin with a purpose of altering institutional existence or characters, or for a purpose of defending institutional existence against any attacks by the opponents (Zacher, 1979 and Billing, 1992: 710). Wars can be conceptualised into two types: internal and international wars.

Types of wars

There are two types of war. They are:

1. The internal war confines itself to a certain geographical location or boundary.
2. The international war takes place between two or more countries. Out of 103 armed conflicts across the world in the 21st century, ninety-seven (97) were fought within the national borders (Renner, 2000), which have made humanitarian assistance necessary.

The regular armed forces or groups such as military, police force, militias and other paramilitary troops are the prosecutors and not protected by the law of armed conflicts in all cases. The non-state actors call Liberation movements use regular guerrilla or partisan armies recruited along the ethnic, national or social classes line to prosecute their wars. The tribal militias or armed gangs were hardly had central control or identifiable lines of command (Scherer, 1997:2). The war situation is always terminated better relationship or treaties between belligerents.

3.2 War and Hostility

It is imperative or necessary to clarify that states can as well involve in hostilities that include armed confrontation without a war prosecution. However, hostilities range from minor skirmishes to extensive military actions or operations. For example, a case study of hostilities – a non-war armed conflict was in Sues Canal in October – November 1956.

For better clarification, hostility is a battle engagement that aims at incapacitating adversary in a violent manner or struggle. Its lower intensity differentiates it from the war, which could be combat between, among or within armed groups called mutiny, or within regular or irregular armed units that degenerated into significant casualties. Hostility can be spread to a wider or larger geographical area, and metamorphoses into a war situation, if it is not well handled or managed. Any hostility that starts with small arms and light weapons can degenerate into a full war scale. Murder, genocide, extermination, torture, rape, kidnapping, racial political or religious persecution and every other inhumane act are the thresholds of hostilities. It is a grave consequence of human rights infringement or violation.

Meanwhile, a unilateral declaration of war by one of the contesting states is regarded as a notice of war to the opposition belligerent, and wherever the hostilities are extensive in nature, the belligerents would be identified, or may otherwise declare neutrality to the contesting state.

3.3 Causes of War

It is a known fact that whenever a peaceful resolution of conflict or hostilities is unachievable, the war or violent conflict would ensue and become inevitable. Be that as it may, there are some reasons responsible for wars:

(i) Ideological Reason

The Cold War era was marked by antagonistic ideological strategies and military rivalries between the Marxist ideological block led by Liberal Democrat and Leninist Communist ideological block led by Sino – Soviet.

The West Liberal Democrat comprises Western Europe and North America, led by the United States of America, while the Leninist Communist comprises the Soviets and some Latin America Countries. The defunct Union of Soviet Socialist Republic (U.S.S.R) now Russia claimed to have embarked on major offensive missile threat during the late summer in 1962. The intentions were to defend against the United State missiles programme surrounding the Communist states.

(ii) Religious Factor

Throughout the periods of 1950 and 1996, the religious conflict constituted about 33 to 47 percent of the global conflicts on insecurities particularly from the Arab world. It escalated dramatically since the outset of Cold War, and the non-religious conflicts declined more than what they used to be. The religious conflict was increasingly seen as an identifiable source of violence and simultaneously interwoven with the other sources of violence like economic, ideological, territorial, and ethnic sources to the extent that they were difficult to isolate. The motivators of religious violence were existed in Islam, Judaism, Christianity, Hinduism, and others. No major religious tradition was believed to be violent free by the extremists.

That was why, a sociologist -Mark Juergensmeyer states a phrase, "Cosmic War" that describes the world view of religious adherent violence in the defence of faith. Juergensmeyer argues that all religious tradition features depict divine wars, that is, God battles against Evil. This was particularly stated in the religions' scriptures. Divine conflicts are featured prominently in the apocalyptic theology of three monotheistic religions, either in Judaism, Christianity, and Islam. In Judaism, it is the final judgment, that is, a realisation of God's purpose for all creations. In Islam, it is a spiritual Jihad. A struggle among the believer to overcome evil, and do good. Live according to the wills of Allah and defend the community of believers against infidels. In Hinduism, a pantheistic religion, it was not a merely confined to a fierce physical struggle between Lord Rama, Rawana, and the Evil one, but also a struggle that linked the battlefield of Ayodhya to daily lives of Hindus. To investigate the claim of cosmic or divine war, Juergensmeyer interviewed members of religious groups ranging from Aum Shinrikyo to Hamas and Christianity identity movement in the United States. In all the religious movements, he discovered the strong echoes of cosmic war.

(iii). Ethnic Reason

Thomson (2000:58) defines an ethnic group as "... a community of people who have a conviction that they have a common fate based on origin, kinship ties, traditions, cultural uniqueness, shared of history and possibly a shared of language". Toland (1993:3) shares the view of Thomson in her conceptualisation of ethnic group and takes it further by adding a sense of belonging of individual level. Ethnicity is a sense of people held by members of a group sharing a common culture and history within a society. The concept "ethnicity" is not a problem *per se*, but the people that are using it as tool to achieve or accomplish personal and selfish agenda or interests (the elite). Paul R. Brass argues that ethnicity and nationalism are not given but socially and politically constructed. They are the creations of elites, who draw upon distortion, and sometimes fabricate materials from their cultural groups as they wish to represent and protect their well-being or existence, or gain political and economic advantage over other groups as well as themselves... The process invariably involves competition and conflict for political power, economic benefits, social status within the political elite, class, and leaderships, both within and among the different ethnic categories" (Kruger 1993:11). For example, Nigerian Civil War (Biafra), genocide in Sudan, Northern Ireland Conflict, Niger Delta crisis, and host of others are ethnic affiliation conflicts.

(iv) Pressure of Democratization

Many states in the present day Africa have been saddled with authoritarian leaderships, corrupt and oligarchy rules, which are occurring through domestic and external forces pressure of interest in Liberal democratization of governing structure and replacement of existing systems of authoritarian rule that give way to less accountable grassroots – based individuals. The Liberal democratization process is believed to be devoid of unnecessary discrimination on the basis of one's ethnicity, race, religion, sex, or other social identities such as political, and rising abuses of human rights.

(v) Poverty and Neglect of Basic Human Needs by the States

There is no doubt, most of the African states' economies are characterized by agricultural or primary production activities that lead to structural imbalances in the economies of the member states and Western World constitution of an act of borrowing that aimed at sustaining both the import and investment needs of developed nations. Their debt service obligations impose general burden on many developing states and cutback social spending on amenities, generate rising prices of commodities, upsurge of huge unemployment, collapse of earnings of individuals, drastic reduction in purchasing power of people, great decline in general standards of living and increasing poverty that impoverish populace.

All these are fostering social tensions, conflict, crises, and wars at large in many African countries.

(vi) Colonial Legacy

The institutional legacies of colonial masters' rules, both direct and indirect rules of divide and rule tactics are preventing political development, and planted a great seed of discord among the ethnic/political groups which has been preventing their forging together for a common national identity predicated on commercial concession.

(vii) It is not possible for a state to exhaust the reasons why it should engage in war with another state. Be that as it may, the following are among other reasons why nations engage in war with another.

- For the assertion of her sovereignty;
- For the protection her boundaries;
- For the purpose of ensuring independence;
- For protection of her citizens;
- For the purpose of illicit trades;
- As a way of showing its strength;
- For the purpose of re-claiming lost territories;

To serve as deterrence and hosts of other reasons that one could immerge.

3.4 Causes of War and Conflict in Pre-Colonial Africa

Although, conflict is an intrinsic and inevitable part of human existence stemming from the pursuit of incompatible interests and goals by different groups, people, society and even individuals. Man, sometimes, resort into armed conflict or war in his pursuit of incompatible and particular interests and goals after every available peaceful means of conflict management have been exhausted, or, out of inordinate ambition of the winner takes all. According to Diallo, the main causes of war in the African societies in the past were characterised by disputes over property, power, and honour. In the present day Senegalese territory for example, land, livestock (discord between nomads and settlers), slave trade (exchange difficulties) and power (opposition to rulers) were the main causes of war.

In the Upper Volta regions now known as Cote d'Ivoire, the Mossis who were reputed to be mongers fought mainly over succession (civil war) or for territorial expansion, food (after epidemic), and slaves from neighbours, sex, honour (struggle over order of precedence) and possessions were the factor that generated into war in Mali.

Diallo also opines that there were more of isolated raids than pitched battle or military expeditions. In Niger area, war took the form of raids by Tuaregs to obtain food from the Sonhrals, while pasture and watering points caused conflicts between nomads and settlers of Peullis and Djermans (Mandigos now in Guinea). The citizens also fought to defend the states when attacked for honour (prestige).

In the case of Ashanti of Kumasi now in Ghana, war was for territorial conquest. Essentially, the Ashanti had a vast empire far larger than the present day Ghana. The empire was extended to geographical location of the South West Nigeria, the ancient Old Empire, which enjoyed several successes of expansionist agenda and very strong in political and economic power. The collapsed led the Yoruba to civil wars of 18th and 19th centuries caused by the desire of other states or communities to have autonomy or share political and economic power and influence. In Igbo land, wars were caused mainly by land or territorial disputes, and the need to obtain restitution for an injury suffered by a citizen in another community. In the typical traditional African societies, there were no pitched battles and expeditions over religious or ethnic differences, no agenda to overthrow rulers of other state to impose one's ideology over another community. etc.

4.0 CONCLUSION

Reference to the above discussion, It should be understood that whether a war is declared or there is a "state of hostilities, the belligerent states must realise that international law frowns at war. Hence, all efforts should be geared towards guiding against a creation of enmities status, and then, find just means of ending war or hostility in such that diplomatic relations and recognition of treaties between belligerent states are kept. Similarly, the traditional African societies in the areas of conflict prevention, management, and resolution, as well as in war making and peacemaking, had no much difference in what is obtainable in the present day adoptions of Geneva Conventions.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, the meanings/definitions of war, relationship between the war and hostility, and discussions of various causes or reasons of war revolving round the day to day activities causing interaction and diplomatic relations between the states or within a territorial integrity of a particular state are the focused.

The causes of war in the African pre-colonial societies' conflict prevention and management, implementations of tactics of war, war termination, and conflict reduction were extensively discussed for students to compare and contrast the traditional ways of war making and conflict management to the modern day war prosecution.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Define the concept of war and differentiate between the war and a state of hostility.
2. Enumerate and explain at least six (6) causes of war.
3. Discuss the African traditional wars

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Brietzke, Paul (1982). *Law Development and the Ethiopian Revolution*. London: Bucknell.
- Busia, K. A. (1951). *The Position of the Chief in the Modern Political System of Ashanti: A study of the Influence of Contemporary Changes on Ashanti Political Institutions*. New York: Oxford University Press.
- Copson, Raymond (1994). *Africa's War and Prospects for Peace*. London: Sharp.
- Deng, Francis ., and I. William Zartman, eds. (1991) *Conflict Resolution in Africa*. Washington: The Brooking Institution.
- Grundy, Kenneth (1971). *Guerrilla Struggle in Africa: An Analysis and Preview*. New York: Grossman.
- Hans Morgenthau, (1960). *Politics Among Nations: The Struggle for Power and Peace*. New York.
- S. Stadman, "Conflict and Conflict Resolution in Africa: A Conceptual Framework", in D Deng and I Zartman, *Op. Cit* p 369.
- Y. Diallo, (1986), *African Traditions and Humanitarian Law: Similarities and Differences*, ICRC.
- Barbara, Tuchman (1962). *The Guns of August*: Bantam Book.

- Bernard, Brodie (1974). *War and Politics*: Free Person Education.
- Dupuy, T.N. (1992) *Understanding War: History and Theory of Combat*. Leo Cooper, London.
- General Carl Von Clausewitz (1940). *On War: Gutenberg, London*.
- Tucker, T.G. (1985) *Etymological Dictionary of Latin*, Ares Publishers Inc., Chicago.

UNIT 2 THEORIES OF WAR

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Biological Theories of War
 - 3.2 Social Theories of War
 - 3.3 Theories of a Just War
 - 3.4 Criteria of Just War Theory
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

In this unit, the efforts are geared towards reviewing various theories and philosophies of war propounded by different scholars in order to establish a broad range of complex intellectual studies and analyses. The analysis of theories of war are divided into several categories such as philosophical, political, economic, technological, legal, sociological, and psychological approaches, because, most of the theories are actually mixed and war is an extremely complex social phenomenon that cannot be explained by single factor or through single approach. This makes it imperative for us to periodise and analysed the theories of war for a clear understanding of the concept.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of the unit, students should be able to:

- Identify and understand the theories of war;
- explain why the wars are fought;
- discuss what a just war connotes; and
- explain the argument of theorist of that justify why wars are waged.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1. Biological Theories of War

The biological theories centred their arguments on innate drives of man, which its analogies are drawn from animal behaviour. According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), Thomas Hobbes in his biological theory states that it is inherent in human nature to be selfish, solitary, poor, nasty, brutish, and short.

This theory believes that human's ancestors were instinctively violent, and through evolution human being evolves, and makes their offspring bear destructive impulse in their genetic makeup. Similarly, St. Augustine, Malthusian and Sigmund Freud belief that human beings are driven by natural instincts of self-preservation and self-actualisation. Neibuhr (1953) "humans are driven by natural quest of "will-to-live" and "will to power" in order to seek power, personal security or survival at the expense of other people around them. The theory supports the innate theory of conflict that states "conflict is an innate instinct within all animals including human beings, and influences their social interactions. In other words, human beings are higher animal species that possess the tendency of being violent over cherished values", that is, conflict is directly or indirectly inherent in man. It can be well explained through innate properties, attributes, hormonal compositions and heredities. The aggressive instinct in human provokes when human felt threaten or challenge by their counterparts.

That was why, Sigmund Freud describes destructive tendency in human as a product of "dialectical struggle" between the two natural instincts in-charge (Eros and Thanatos). The 'Eros' is associated with the life and survival, while the 'Thanatos' is associated with the aggressive and death tendency. The theory states that every member of society should learn how to control or develop coping mechanism for their expression in terms of life or death instinct. According to Freud, both instincts are always struggling to release their instinct, and any instinct that wins the contest to dominate would overcome and manifest itself. Whenever Eros instinct is released first, its resultant effect would be aggression to survive which may tend to conflict, but whenever Thanatos instinct overcome or release first, it would produce suicide mission/tendency of self-killing. They are developed by ecologist, psychologists, and psychoanalyst.

3.1.1 Ethnology Perspectives

The ecologists derived their argument from the study of animal war fare which they believed may have contributed to an understanding of war as man employed. They assert that the behavior of monkeys and apes in captivity and of young children, for example, show basic similarities. In both cases, it is possible to observe that aggressive behaviour is usually arises through some drives. Drives such as rivalry for possession, intrusion of stranger or frustration of an activity are sometimes responsible for aggressive nature. They opine that major conflict situations lead to aggression among animals, most especially, those that concern access of the males to females and control of a territory of feeding and breeding.

They are associated with the patterns of dominance. But contrary to the analogies drawn by many ethnologists of animal to human behavior, there several restrained colleagues as well as many social scientists questioning the assertion.

The term aggression, for example, was not precisely and consistently used. It was merely referred to the largely symbolic behaviour of animals involving such signals as grimaces. They argued further that observing animal behaviour can be regarded as a possible important source of inspiration for hypotheses, but it must be checked through some studies of human behaviour, which has not been empirically and adequately done. Its advanced hypotheses are seen to be having little foundation and merely interesting ideas to be investigated. This because human behaviour is not fixed to the extent that animal behaviour is partly man. Man evolves different patterns of behaviour in response to the environmental factors such as: geography, climate, and contact with the other social groups. The variety of their behaviour patterns is such that it can be used at both sides of argument concern. In other word, whether or not, man has an innate tendency to be aggressive.

The ethnologists studied two particular interesting subjects of which the effects of overcrowding animals and animal behaviour regarding territory are the first. Their study of overcrowding was not completed, and the findings state normal behaviour patterns break down such conditions, and that, aggressive behaviours become prominent are subject to the proved that animal and human reactions to the overcrowdings are different. Ethnologists also advanced plausible hypothesis concerning the biological means of population control through reduced fertility that occurs when animal population increase beyond the capacity of their environment. Whether such biological control mechanisms operate in human society, however, requires further investigation. The findings that have to do with the “territorial immature” in animals, that is, the demarcation and defence against the intrusion of a fixed area for feeding and breeding – are even more subject to prove when an analogy is drawn from them to support human behaviour. The analogy between an animal territory and a territorial state is obviously extremely tenuous. In nature, the territories of members of species differ to some extents, but usually provide adequate resources. The use of force in their defense is rarely necessary, because, the customary menacing signals are generally led to withdrawal of the potential rivals. Sometimes, this could hardly be compared with a catastrophic defense of the territory of a national.

3.1.2 Psychology Perspective

One of the psychology schools of theorists postulated that the major causes of war can be found in man's psychological nature.

Such psychological approaches are ranged from general that often mere an intuitive assertion regarding human nature to a complex analysis utilising the concepts and techniques of modern psychology. This includes a wide range of ethical and philosophical teaching and insight of the work of people like St. Augustine and the 17th – century philosopher Spinoza. The modern psychological approaches emphasize the significance of psychological maladjustments or complexes and false, stereotyped images held by decision makers of the countries and their leaders. Some psychologists posit an innate aggressiveness in man. Others focus on public opinion and its influence, particularly, in times of tension; while others stress the importance of decision makers and the need for their careful selection and training.

Most believe that an improved social adjustment of individuals would decrease frustration, insecurity, and fear would reduce the likelihood of war. All of them believe in the importance of research and education. However, the limitation of such approaches derives from their very generality. Whether the psychological premises are optimistic or pessimistic about the nature of man, one cannot ignore its impact on human behaviour of socio-political institutions that give opportunities to exercise his good or evil propensities and impose restraints upon him.

3.2 Social Theories of War

Despite the fact that psychological explanations of war contain much that seems to be valid, they are insufficient, because, man behaves differently in different social contexts. Hence, many thinkers that subscribe to the context, and focus either on internal organization of States or international system within will operate this. The theories attributing war to the nature of state falling into two broad streams, namely: Liberal and Socialist.

3.2.1 Liberal Analyses

Three basic elements were distinguished by the early or classical liberals of the 18th and 19th centuries in their analysis. The individuals, society, and the state regarded the emergence of the state as the outcome of the interaction of both individual and society. They assumed that if society is self-regulating, the socio-economic system would be able to run smoothly with little or without interference from government. Economy, decentralization, and freedom from governmental control were the classical liberal's main concerns, as it was shown, particularly, in the write up of John Stuart Mill. They accepted the necessity of maintaining defense but postulated the existence of basic harmony of interests among the states, which would minimise the incidence of wars.

Economic cooperation based on an international division of labour and free trade should be in the interests of everybody. The commerce would be a great panacea and rational substitute for war. They emphasised variety of factors in their explanation of war that never be or occur. First and foremost, they focused on the autocratic governments, which were presumed to wage war against the wishes of peacefully inclined people. This has thus become a major tenet of liberal political philosophy that war could be eliminated by introducing universal suffrage system, because, people would surely vote out of the office of any belligerently inclined government. From the early American pamphleteer Thomas Paine onward, a major school of liberal supported republicanism and stressed the peaceful impact of public opinion. Although, they could not agree about actual policies, they stressed certain general ideas concerning relations between states, paralleling their *laissez-faire* ideas of internal organization of the state with the ideas of a minimum amount of international organization. The use of force is strictly limited to the repelling aggression, importance of public opinion and democratically elected governments, and rational resolution of conflicts and disputes. Later in the course of 19th century, however, and especially after War 1, Liberals began to accept the conclusion that an unregulated international society did not automatically tend toward peace and advocated international organization as a corrective organ.

3.2.2 Socialist Analyses

Although Liberals see political structures as the primary factor determining the propensity of states to engage in war, socialists turned to the socio-economic system of states as primary factor. Early in the 20th century, the two streams did converge to some extent, as evidenced by the English radical liberal, John Hobson, explained wars in terms, and later adopted by Lenin.

3.2.2.1 Marxian Analysis

Marx attributed war not to the behaviour of the states but to the structure of society. Marx was of the view that war occurred not as an often voluntary instrument of state policy but as a result of a clash of social forces. He saw state as a mere political superstructure which the primary determining factor lies in the capitalist mode of production, which leads to the development of two antagonistic classes: 1. the bourgeoisie; and 2. the proletariat. The bourgeoisie controls governmental_machinery in its own interests.

In its international relations, the capitalist state engages in war, because, it was driven by the dynamism of the system. They constantly grow need for raw materials, markets, and supplies of cheap labour. The only way to avoid war is to remove its basic cause by replacing the capitalism with socialism, and thus abolishing both class struggle and states. The Marxist doctrine, however, gave no clear guidance about the interim period before the millennium is reached. The international solidarity of proletariat proved a myth when war broke out in 1914, facing the European Social Democratic Parties with the problem of adopting an attitude to the outbreak of the war. The second international working-class parties repeatedly pass resolutions urging the working classes to bring pressure upon their respective governments to prevent war, but, once war had broken out, each individual party regarded it as defensive for its own state and to participate in the war effort. This was explained by Lenin due to a split in the organization of the proletariat that could overcome only through the activity of a rigidly organized revolutionary vanguard.

Along the line, the Western Socialists were increasing, although varying in degrees. To Revisionist, the interpretations of Marxism, and attempts to revise socio-economic structures through evolutionary constitutional processes, is seeing as the only possible means of preventing wars. In the Soviet Union socialist theory of war of changed, the new communist regime responded to change in circumstances. Soviet theoreticians distinguished three types of war: between the capitalist states, and capitalist and socialist states, and colonial war of liberation. The internecine wars among the capitalist states are supposed to arise from capitalist competition and imperialist rivalries, for they weaken the capitalist camp. A war between capitalist and socialist states is the one clearly expresses the basic principles of class struggle one of which the socialist states must prepare.

Finally, the wars of colonial liberation can be expected between subjugated people and their colonial masters. The weakness of the theory is that there are two major expected types of war, the intra-capitalist and capitalist – socialist, have not materialised as frequently as Soviet Union and in the socialist camp. Even in communist countries, nationalism seems to have proved more powerful than socialism. The National Liberation Movements appeared to be forcibly subdued in Soviet Union, despite its communist regime. The war between socialist states is also not unthinkable, as the doctrine claims: only the colossal preponderance of Soviet forces prevented a full-scale war in 1956 against Hungary; and in 1968 against Czechoslovakia. The war between the Soviet Union and the People's Republic of China was a serious possibility for two decades after the Sino-Soviet split in 1962.

The armed conflict erupted between China and Vietnam after the latter country became the most powerful State in South-east Asia. In other words, the theory does not provide for wars of liberation against socialist states, such as conducted war by Afghan Mijahideen against the Soviet Union from 1979 to 1989.

3.2.2.2 Nationalist Analysis

Several theories on war claim that war ultimately result from the allegiance of men to nations and from intimate link between the nation and the state. The connection between the nation and the state is firmly established by national self-determination doctrine, which has become major basis for the legitimacy of states from the perceptive of many scholars, and as major factor of their establishment and breakup. It was on the principle that political boundaries of the Eastern Europe and the Balkans were arranged after World War 1 which has the principal slogan of anti-colonial movement of the 20th Charter of the United Nations in the objective of “self-determination of peoples” as well as in the specific link between nationalism and statehood that renders both so dangerous.

The rulers of a state are ultimately governed by what is loosely summed up as the “national interest”, which occasionally clashes directly with the national interests of the other states. The idea of the nation-state is never fully achieved as no members of a particular nation gathered with one state boundary. Conversely, many states contain sizable national minorities. Lack of full correlation frequently gives rise to dangerous tensions that eventually lead to war. A government inspired by nationalism may conduct a policy aiming at the assimilation of the national minorities, as well as general tendency of central and eastern European governments in the interwar period. It may also attempt to reunite the members of the nation living outside its boundaries, such as it was done by Adolf Hitler. It would be very impossible for national groups that do not have access to the state control to feel alienated and dissatisfied with its regime and attempt to claim or pursue self-determination in a separate state, as demonstrated in the attempt/move to carve Biafra out of Nigeria. The separation of Bangladesh from Pakistan and several minority states that pulled out of former USSR after the Cold War are also good examples.

Self-determination principle lack rational basis for deciding or allowing national minority to breakaway while the majority group may violently oppose the breakaway movement because of some benefits that might no longer be available to the majority. In the light of the above, no suitable method has been found for divorcing nationalism from the state and for meeting national demands through adequate social and cultural provisions within a large unit.

Nationalism has been perceived or viewed to be making compromise and acceptance of defeat more difficult, and also, induces war through the severity of its influence. On the other hand, nationalism has ceased to be a major cause of conflict and war among the nations of Western Europe.

Special – Interest Groups Perspective

The state is regarded as an undifferentiated whole by some theories and generalised about its behaviour, while some theorists on the other hand are more sociologically oriented and focus their attention on the roles played within the state by different special – interest groups. The theorists made a distinction between the great mass of people and groups that are directly involved in and influential with government. Some schools postulated continuous conspiracy of the rulers against the ruled that can be traced to prehistoric times, when priests and warriors combined in the first state structures. Some schools, however, seek an answer to the question of why some governments are more prone to engage in war than others. The general findings to the answer are in the influence of important interest groups that pursue particular and selfish ends.

Theories of Just War

The theory of Just War is simply a doctrine of military ethics studied by moral theologians, ethicists and international policy makers, which holds that or asserts that conflict/war can and ought to meet some conditions or criteria of philosophical, religious or political justice; provided the laid down conditions or criteria are met. In the present day era, warfare has become a legal institution, which organises and disciplines the military; and defines the battle space, privileges of killing to debate the legitimacy of waging of war down to the tactics of the particular battles.

3.1 Definition of Just War

The term ‘just war’ refers to the set of norms or criteria for assessing whether government recourse to force is morally justified. The just-war tradition is expressed in many forms: 1. in the international law of codes of conduct of national military forces. 2. in the moral philosophy, theology, and church teaching. Just-war theory deals with the justification of how and why wars are fought, which can either be theoretical or historical in nature. The theoretical aspect is concerned with the ethical justification of war and forms of warfare, which the historical aspect, or the “just war tradition” deals with by the historical body of rules or agreements applied (or at least existing) in various ways across the ages.

The doctrine of just war was believed to have been developed by Augustine in *Civitas Dei* via the use of comprehensive framework tagged : “the City of God in the reaction to “barbarian” invasions of Western Roman Empire in fourth century”. Drawing on ancient Greek philosophical principles, Augustine developed the theory as a middle way between the absolute pacifist strains of Christian ethics typified by certain Gospel passages which include “do not resist an evil person; if someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also (Mathew 5:39)”, and the Roman Imperial imperative to conquer military enemies of the state.

1. The “just war” doctrine can best be understood in the context of “pacifism vs. just war” the debate that continues to divide Christian and other ethnical theorists; although, it can be profitably compared to other theories which attempt to justify war, such as Realism (Realpolitik). The Just War Theory was most recently asserted as authoritative of Catholic Church teaching by the United States Catholic Bishops in their pastoral letter. “The Challenge of Peace of God’s Promise and the Response”, issued in 1983 made the “Just War theory” encompasses modern political doctrines which promote the view that a specific war is just given satisfactory conditions.

2. The history of just-war tradition is also perceived to be as old as warfare itself. Early records of collective fighting revealed that some moral considerations were used by warriors. This includes consideration of women and children or the fair treatment of prisoners. Some acts in war have always been deemedly dishonorable, whilst others have been deemedly honourable. Considerations of honourable acts differ with time and place. The very fact of one moral virtue has been sufficient to infuse warfare with moral concerns. The just war theory also has a long history. Whilst part of the Bible hint at ethnical behaviour in war; and concepts of justice cause most systematic exposition given by Saint Thomas Aquinas. In the *Summa Theological*, Aquinas presents the general outline of what became the just war theory. He discusses not only the justification for war, but also the kinds of activity that are permissible in war. Aquinas’s thoughts become the model for later Scholars and Jurists to expand. Among the most important or prominent scholars are: Francisco de Vitoria (1486 - 1546), Francisco Suarez (1548 - 1617), Hugo Grotius (1583-1645), Samuel Pufendorf (1637-1704), Christian Worlff (1679-1754), and Emerich de Vattel (1714-1767).

The twentieth century just war theorists or scholars of contemporary texts include Michael Walzer's *Just and Unjust Wars* (1977); Barrie Paskins and Michael Dockrill's *The Ethics of War* (1979); Richard Norman's *Ethics, the Killing, and War* (1995); Brian Orend's *War and International Justice* (2001); and Michael Walzer's *War and Justice* (2001); as well as seminal articles by Thomas Nagel's "War and Massacre"; Elizabeth Anscombe's "War and Murder"; and a host of others commonly found in the journals of *Ethics*, or, the *Journal of Philosophy and Public Affairs*.

3.2 Criteria of Just War Theory

Just War Theory is made up of two set of criteria in explaining justification for war or conduct of war. The first establishing *jus ad bellum*, the right to go to war; the second establishing *jus in bello*, right conduct within the war.

3.2.1 The *Jus Ad Bellem* Convention- Just Cause

The principles of justice war are commonly believed or held to be having just cause. Or, the reason for going into war needs to be just and can therefore be recapturing as punishment for a wrong doing in a war situation. Possessing just cause is first and foremost arguably important condition for *jus ad bellum*. Most theorists on this are of the views that initiating acts of aggression is unjust and gives a group just cause to defend it. The proscription remains an open-ended unless 'aggression' is defined. For example, just cause resulting from an act of aggression can ostensibly be responses to a physical injury. For example, the violation of a territory; an insult or assault -an aggression against national honour; a trade embargo - aggression against economic activities; or even to a neighbour's prosperity - violation of social justice.

Hence, the onus of just war theorist provides a consistent and sound account for what is a just cause. Whilst not going into the reasons does not offer a useful condition for just cause, the consensus is that an initiation of physical force is wrong and may justly be resisted. Self-defence against the physical aggression is therefore putatively the sufficient reason for just cause. In other words, the principle of self-defense can be extrapolated to anticipate probable acts of aggression, as well as assisting others against an oppressive government from another external threat (interventionism). Therefore, it is commonly held that aggressive war is only permissible if its purpose is to retaliate against wrong already committed (e.g., to pursue and punish an aggressor), or to pre-empt an anticipated attack.

Comparative Justice

In a situation where there may be rights and wrongs on all sides of a conflict, to override the presumption against the use of force, the injustice suffered by one party must significantly outweigh that suffered by the other. Some theorists such as Brian Orend omit this term, seeing it as fertile ground for exploitation by bellicose regime.

Legitimate Authority

Only duly constituted public authorities may use deadly force or wage war. Most just war theorists are of the view that the notion of proper authority resides in the sovereign power of the state. The concept of sovereignty, therefore, raises a plethora of issues, which are as follows. If a government is just, that is, is accountable, and does not rule arbitrarily, then giving the officers of the state the right to declare war is reasonable. This means the more the alienated from a proper and just form of government is, the more the reasonable its sovereignty disintegrates. A critical example of such was in 1940 when Nazi Germany invaded France and set up Vichy puppet regime, of which the people of France did not have any allegiance under its precepts and rules.

Right Intention

It is generally believed that a nation waging a just war would be doing so for a cause of justice, and not for the reasons of self-interest or aggrandizement. Putatively, a just war cannot be considered to be just if the reasons for national interest are not paramount or overwhelm the pretext of fighting aggression. Force may be used only in a truly just cause, and solely for that purpose. Correcting a suffered wrong is considered as a right direction, and while material gain or maintenance of economies is not.

Probability of Success

The just war theory asserts that there must be a reasonable probability of success. The principle of reasonable success is consequentiality in the costs and benefits of a campaign that must be calculated. Although, arms may not be used in a futile cause, or, in a case where disproportionate measures are required to achieve success, but force may be used after all the peaceful and viable alternative means have been tried and exhausted.

Proportionality

The final guide of *jus ad bellum* is that the desired should be proportional to the means used. That is, the anticipated benefits of waging a war must be proportionate to its expected evils or harms. This principle is also known as the principle of macro-proportionality, so as to distinguish it from the *jus in bello* principle of proportionality.

3.2.2 The Principles of Jus in Bello

In a situation whereby the war becomes inevitable and begun, the just war theory also directs how combatants should conduct themselves, that is, *jus in bello*. The rule of just conduct falls under the two broad principles of discrimination (distinction) and proportionality.

Principle of Discrimination (Distinction)

The principle of discrimination or distinction concerns those who are legitimately targeted in war. The principle states that the acts of war should be directed towards enemy combatants, and not towards non-combatants caught in circumstances they did not create. The prohibited acts include bombing of civilian residential areas that include no military target and committing acts of terrorism or reprisal against civilians. In the course of waging war, it is considered unfair and unjust to attack indiscriminately since non-combatant or innocents are deemed to stand outside the field of war proper.

Although, there is a problem in defining who is a combatant and who is not, because, combatants usually carry arms openly while guerrillas disguise themselves as civilians. In one hand, being a civilian does not necessarily mean that one is not a threat, and hence, not a legitimate target. For example, if an individual or civilian citizen of a country happen to be one or only individual that possesses correct combination that detonate a device or operate high technically sophisticated war equipment. This then would makes such individual becomes not only causally efficacious in firing of weapon of war, but morally responsible; and, reasonably he would also become legitimate military target. His job, skill, or technical knowledge is therefore effectively militarised his status. On the other hand, the role being played by civilians in supporting an unjust war could be considered to ascertain the extent at which he/she is morally culpable, and if they are culpable to some extent, does that mean they become legitimate targets? This invokes the issue of collective versus individual responsibility. Another typical example was the war between Israeli and Isobar Terrorists group of Palestine in year 2007, which the Isobar guerillas located their war machine in the mist of civilian population and was attacking or firing their missiles/rocket launcher to Israelis territory.

The Isobar adopted the war strategy based on the assumption that Israelis would obey the international law by not attacking the civilian population. At a deeper, stage, Israel was forced or was left with no option than to attacked Isobars indiscriminately regardless of consideration for the civilian populace.

Principle of Proportionality

Just war conduct is usually being governed by the principle of proportionality. The principle requires tempering the extent and violence of warfare to minimise destruction and casualties. It seeks to minimise overall suffering, emphasizes that the force used must be proportional to the wrong endured and to possible good that may come. The more disproportional the more suspect will be the sincerity of belligerent nation's claim to justness of a war it fights.

Military Necessity

Just war conduct should be governed by the principle of minimum force. An attack or action must be intended to help in military defeat of the enemy, it must be an attack on military objective, and the harm caused to civilians or civilian property must be proportional and not excessive in relation to concrete and direct military advantage anticipated. This principle is meant to limit excessive and unnecessary death and destruction.

3.2.3 Jus Post Bellum: Ending a War

Some theorists, such as Gary Bass, Louis Iasiello and Brian Orend proposed third category of Just War theories in the recent years. Jus post bellum has to do with justice after a war, which include peace treaties, reconstruction, war crimes trials, and war victims' reparations. The following principles were proposed by Orend:

a. Just cause for Termination

States may terminate a war if there has been a reasonable vindication of rights that they were violated at the first instances, and if the aggressor is willing to negotiate the terms of surrender. The terms of surrender include a formal apology, compensations, war crime trials, and perhaps rehabilitation.

b. Right Intention

A state could only terminate a war under the agreed conditions in the above criteria. Revenge is not permitted. The state should also be willing to apply some levels of objectivity in investigating any war crimes its armed forces may have committed.

c. Public Declaration and Authority

The terms of peace or peace agreements should be made known to public by a legitimate authority. It should also be accepted by a legitimate authority.

d. Discrimination

State is needed to differentiate between political and military leaders, combatants, and civilians. Punitive measures are to be limited to those directly responsible for the conflict.

e. Proportionality

Any terms of surrender should be proportional to the rights that were initially violated. Draconian measures, absolute crusades and any other attempts to deny the surrendered country the right to participate in world community are not permitted.

3.3 Alternative Theories of Just War**i. Militarism**

Militarism believes that war is not inherently bad; it can as well be beneficial to some aspects of society.

ii. Realism

The core proposition of realism is skepticism as to whether moral concepts such as justice can be applied to the conduct of international affairs. Proponents of realism have the belief that moral concepts should never prescribe nor circumscribe a state's behaviour. But rather, such state should place an emphasis on the state security and self-interest. One form of realism, the descriptive realism, proposes that states cannot act morally. On the other hand, the prescriptive realism argues that motivation factors violate the Principles of just war effectively and constitute a branch of realism.

iii. Revolution and Civil War

Just war theory states that a just war must have just authority, which was interpreted as a legitimate government. It leaves little room for revolutionary war or civil war where an illegitimate entity may declare war for the reasons that yet remain criteria of Just War Theory. It would be less of a problem if the "just authority" is widely interpreted as "wishes of people". Similarly, the Article 3 of 1949 Geneva Conventions stop this issue by stating that if one of the parties to a civil war is a high contracting party, both parties to conflict are bound as minimum of the provisions (humanitarian). The Article 4 of the Third Geneva Convention also makes it clear that the treatment of prisoners of war is binding on both parties even when captured soldiers have an allegiance to a government, or, an authority not recognised by the detaining power.

iv. Absolutism

Absolutism holds that there are various ethical rules that are absolute. Breaking such moral rules is never legitimate, and therefore, always unjustifiable.

v. Pacifism

Pacifism is the belief that war of any kind is morally unacceptable and/or pragmatically not worth the cost. Pacifists extend humanitarian concern not just to civilian but also to ex-combatants, especially, the conscripts.

4.0 CONCLUSION

Based on the above discussion, it is important to have a clear understanding of some factors responsible for a war making leading to state hostilities between or among two or more states. One can therefore see it that just war theory comprises both moral and amoral abhorrence toward war with a readiness to accept that sometimes war may be necessary. The justification for this is relativistic in nature and depends on circumstances leading to the war and how the war contradicts the universal philosophical traditions.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this section, the course looked at some theories of war. The first theory is biological cause of war which was discussed under the two sub-headings, namely: ethnology and psychological perspectives. The second aspect was social theories of war, which was divided into sub-headings. The principal criteria or instruments for Just War Theories were discussed. The first criteria used were Jus ad bellum, which is the right to go to war, and the second was established jus in bello, that is, right conduct of war. The third criterion explains the process of ending a war, which is jus post bellum.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. To what extent does a biological theory justify man's innate drives for war?
2. Discuss social theories of war with reference to any recent war of your choice.
3. Identify any war waged in the past and put up a justify defense for war or otherwise.

7.0 REFERENCE/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Harold, Lasswell (1930). *Psychopathology and Politics*. Chicago University of Chicago Press.
- Kenneth, Waltz (1959). *Man, the State and War: A Theatrical Analysis*. Columbia. Columbia University Press.
- William, Graham Summer (1911). *War and Other Essays: Caniticult*. Yale University Press.
- Benso, Richard (2006) “The Just War Theory: A Traditional Catholic Moral View (http://www.the-tidings.com | 2006 | 0825 / benson.htm)”, *The Tidings*. Showing the Catholic View in Three Points, Including John Paul II’s Position Concerning War.
- David Roberts Mac Donald, Padre E. C. Crosse and ‘the Devonshire Epitaph’ The Astonishing Story of One Man at the Battle of the Somme (with Antecedents to Today’s Just War Dialogue) 2007 Cloverdale Books South Bend. ISBN 978 – 1 – 929569 – 45 – 8.
- Childress, James F. (1978). “Just-War Theories: The Bases, Interrelations, Priorities, and Functions of Their Criteria”. *Theological Studies* 39:427 – 45.
- Irfan Khawaja, Review of Larry May, War Crimes and Just War, in *Democratic* 10, ([7](http://www.democratiya.com/review.asp?reviews_id=124)), an extended Critique of Just War Theory.
- Michael Walzer Just and Unjust Wars (1977). *A Moral Argument with Historical Illustrations*, 4th ed., (New York: Basic Books,). ISBN 0-465-03707-0.
- Michael W. Brough, John W. Lango, Harry van der Linden, eds., *Rethinking the Just War Tradition* (Albany, N. Y: SUNY Press 2007). Discusses the Contemporary Relevance of Just War Theory.
- Russell, Frederick H. (1997). *The Just War in the Middle Ages* Cambridge University Press.

UNIT 3 CONTEMPORARY AND TRADITIONAL AFRICAN WARS

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
- 3.1 War in Contemporary African Society/World
- 3.2 Comparatives Analysis of War in Contemporary/Traditional African Societies
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

Unlike in the Pre-colonial African societies when the war prosecutions were notified, minimum weapons of war were used, protection of persons was guaranteed; asylum, combatants, conduct of war, fate of losers, etc. were consciously addressed, the cases of war in the contemporary African societies and world at large regulations are weakened by international politics. All forms of inhuman such as ethnic cleansing, genocide, terrorism, indiscriminate bombing, use of weapon of mass destruction and host of others are the order of the day. According to Diallo, it was after the introduction of slavery and roads for colonialism in Africa... that traditional societies began to be disintegrated.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, students would be able to:

- state cause (s) of war in contemporary African societies and the world at large;
- identify strategies of modern war;
- describe different forms of war in contemporary world;
- explain the effects of war on humanity;
- appreciate and account for the differences between pre-colonial and contemporary war.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Wars in Contemporary African Society

The wars in the contemporary African society are the focus of this section. Issues such as causes, strategies, and weapons of wars are discussed.

3.1.1 The Causes of War

In contemporary African Societies, the causes of war emerged from colonial legacies of state formation that denied Africans of their development immediately after independence. The causes of war include: unclear national boundaries, foreign instigation of state against one another by their former colonial masters, natural mineral resources discoveries near borders and territorial integrity of states, Cold War Era stemming from the ideological differences (capitalism and communism), opposition to dictatorship, military rule or intervention (via coup de-tat), racism/inter-ethnic power struggles, amalgamation of several nations with different cultural, ethnic and religious background by their colonial masters to form a state and host of others. All these and more transformed many African states to theatre of war or laboratory of a great destruction of life and property leading to large human and material losses that are beyond human imagination, expectation and comprehension.

3.1.2 The Strategies of War

a. The War Plan

It is evidently clear that all modern wars making involves serious debates among the principal's actors. That is, it is the duty of the military to advance best possible military solution that ensures political, military and resource constraints. The level of forces required (air, sea and land), the timing of major movement of the troops and equipments, the size of conventional ground forces to be involved, aerial survey, and the ability to rely on force elements like air power and special forces versus "traditional" elements of military power such as heavy armour.

b. Innovation and Initiative

It is very important to note that armed forces could only operate effectively when they are very sure and confident of their protective mode against chemical or biological weapons. They must as well be given better training and equipped with sophisticated arms and ammunition for the warfare.

c. Morale and Motivation

Apart from training acquisition and readiness of armed forces, high morale and strong motivation as well as high professional capability is required for successful war making. It is also important to note that politics and propaganda generally have more impact in shaping morale and motivation of armed forces. The unit cohesion and loyalty of the military service is seen as professionalism and should be their watchwords. Those who lay more emphasis on technology and efficiency sometimes lose their sight. But morale and motivational levels determine willingness of the armed forces to sustain unequaled sortie and maneuvers to deal with the problems of weather and unexpected resistance of the oppositional forces.

d. Competence, Adaptive and Flexibility in War Planning

The professionalism and adaptability in warfare planning is highly required in the modern era, because, it will greatly aid their major advances in joint warfare capability, computerisation and integration at warfront. In addition, the most important skills in modern arms is not how to agree on a war plan, but how to change plan when the reality of intervention is necessary, and not to abandon the key elements of sufficient adaptive to win. The “war plan” should be flexible enough in such that the armed forces could rapidly adjust and fashion out alternative solutions to any unforeseen challenges.

e. Situational Awareness, Intelligence, Command, and Communication.

The intelligence needed for effective command and communications are fundamentals to modern day war. This is because the modern day war comprises combination of imagery, electronic intelligence, signals intelligence, human intelligence, and improved communications of the command intelligence fusion at all levels day and night for effective situational awareness. It is very important, because, the modern day wars can be likened to good wine that get better with age.

f. Psychological Warfare

The importance and immense benefits derive from psychological warfare cannot as well be under estimated in the present day of conventional warfare. The researches and reports of previous wars show that psychological warfare such as dropping leaflets, periodic broadcast hours on radio and television help in causing more harms in the psychic of oppositional forces, and sometimes expedite surrenders.

Before the propaganda could achieve its desired goals and objective of enemy's surrender, it must be timed at their critical situation when they may have been contemplating surrender. In other words, the evidence gathered from the recent warfare indicated that propaganda missions sometimes helped considerably to persuade enemy forces either not to fight or to defect, desert, or surrender.

3.1.3 Weapons of War

Unlike in the African traditional war where several unsophisticated, less destructive arms and ammunitions were used, the modern day wars are waged with highly deadly, destructive, effective, and efficient arms and ammunitions. Such wars are fought today in the most African troubled spots and several parts of the world with weapons of mass destruction such as nuclear, biological, and chemical weapons that are highly destructive. The bombs fired by warplanes with long-range missiles and hosts of others are resulting into heavy casualties (loss of life). The incessant exodus of refugees; the increased internally displaced persons' population, destruction of infrastructures, political-economy and social structural of society are the consequences of modern day wars. Other deadly and highly destructive automated machine includes fighter bombers, electronic surveillance warfare aircraft, tanker aircraft, and war aircraft for the Air Force. The Naval Force or sea power comprises carrier taskforce, amphibious taskforce, surface ships, submarine, sea based cruise missiles, aircraft Carrier HMS Ocean, nuclear – powered submarine. The land forces who are Army make use of amour tanker, AK-47 Rifle. The highly trained joint military personnel comprising army, naval and air forces are as well crucial elements of war respectively.

3.2 Comparative Analysis of War, Peacemaking, and Conflict Management in Contemporary and Traditional African Societies

First and foremost, in the traditional Africa, the use of truce to establish justice and restore social harmony between or among the parties involved was the norms and values of the society for a proper management of war where the victims or offenders gained compensations or restitutions. But today, the reverse is the case. The purpose (and machinery) of war management is more of winning the case, and not establishing the truth and justice.

On the other hand, the aftermath effect of colonialism elongated the military rule that eroded patience and virtue of problems, challenges, and differences management. Unlike in the past when the Africans see themselves as brother's keepers and used everything they have to seek for peace, today's method is individualistic and force applications.

In another view, the military are professionalised and monopolised in such that, the instruments of violence and coercion is solely at the disposal of the military and thereby exposing the civilians to danger unlike traditional African societies where military skills were democratised. The African education and socialisation process impacted knowledge, wisdom of ancestors, vocation or skills for earning one's living, and how to live a virtuous life as well as educate people about peace, and skills for peacemaking, conflict prevention, management and resolution. But today, the western education is geared toward acquisition of knowledge and skills required to earn a living or targeted towards awarding a certificate that serves as just a meal ticket.

In pre-colonial Africa, conflict prevention, management or resolution was a duty of local authorities (as there were no central governments) that applied traditional institutions, customs, values, traditions, procedures and sanctions to conflict situation. In the post-colonial or contemporary period, state acts as central authority vested with the primary responsibility of maintaining peace, order, and security via the courts, police, and military. Although the local authorities exist till date, but they lack confidence in managing conflicts their society conflict successfully. In addition, the introduction of western education and foreign religions eroded the rich African cultural heritage and made a caricature of it, in such that, Africans have lost their sight of traditional models of securing their villages, towns and models of conflict prevention, management and resolution, peacemaking, confidence-building and peace building training for the youths and adults. Despite the introduction and acceptance of the conventional western models, they are neither produced sustainable peace nor providing the much needed and desired security. The continent of Africa is ravaged by conflicts and wars resulting into large numbers of refugees and displaced persons, and thereby created humanitarian crisis. Nevertheless, the importance is attached to the human life in contemporary African society, but life has become the cheapest commodity that can be terminated at any time during provocation unlike traditional African societies.

Diallo in his study of several pre-colonial African societies ... “the parties negotiated for a long time to seek a peaceful solution”. This is not farfetched from the fact that high value was attached to human life and property but also to human and societal relations within or across the communities and societies.

4.0 CONCLUSION

The discussion of contemporary war making and appraisal of traditional and modern war making, peacemaking, and conflict management ascertained the establishment and empowerment of necessary institutions and structures in the local, state, national, and continental levels as inevitable. In achieving these desired goals and objectives, one needs to study the past methods, values, principles and models in the areas of peace education, conflict prevention, management and resolution, compare them with the contemporary models and introduce necessary reforms and adopt useful ones in order to have a sustainable peace and move society forward.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, war making in the contemporary African societies was examined, while a critical review of the African traditional methods of war making, peacemaking and conflict management and modern models were discussed for students to know their strength and weaknesses, and come up with models that can bring lasting peace to the society.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. The traditional African models of war making, peacemaking, and conflict management are far better than contemporary model. Discuss.
2. Eradication or prevention of war in African societies was a huge task, but usually accomplished success. Discuss.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Hans, Morgeuthau (1980). *Politics Among Nations: The Struggle for Power and Peace*. New York.
- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520

- OBC, Nwolise (1998). "The Importance of Israel: – Middle East Arab Nations Peace Accords to African and World Peace and Security", in *African Journal on Conflict Prevention Management, and Resolution*, (Addis Ababa), Vol. 2, No. 1. p.3.
- Peter, Wallensteen (1991). "The Resolution and Transformation of International Conflicts: A Structural Perspective", in R. Vay Ryned (ed), *New Direction in Conflict Theory: Conflict Resolution and Conflict Transformation*. London Sage Publication.
- Zartman, I. (1991). "Conflict Reduction: Prevention, Management and Resolution", in F. Deng and I. Zartman (ed) *Conflict Resolution in Africa*. Washington DC.
- Stadman, S. "Conflict and Conflict Resolution in Africa; A Conceptual Framework" in F. Deng and I Zartman.
- Diallo, Y. (1986). *African Tradition and Humanitarian Law: Similarities and Difference*. ICRC.

UNIT 4 DISPLACEMENT OF PERSONS: REFUGEES/ INTERNALLY DISPLACED PERSONS IN WAR SITUATIONS

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
- 3.1 Displacement of Persons: Refugees and Internally Displaced
- 3.2 Causes and the Ordeals of Displaced Persons in war
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The recent dimensions of global socio-political crises that degenerated into different cases of displaced population and sacked communities has called for urgent attention from the global stakeholders in terms of interventions, humanitarian assistance, and education/re-orientation. This is because the much effort needed to broker peace and ensure security of life and property is found wanting. Insecurity spreads across the borders and manifested serious global humanitarian crises in terms of displacement of persons, spreading of disease and virus. The terms displacements of persons, causes and their consequences are the focus of this unit.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, students would be able to:

- clarify and define displacement of persons in terms of refugee and internally displaced persons;
- state and discuss the causes of displacements of people;
- differentiate refugee from internally displaced persons ;
- Discuss the ordeals of displacement persons;
- State the trends and flights of refugees in Africa; and
- Identify those who are behind their flights and suggest solution.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Refugees

This section clarifies some issues on definitions of refugee and the causes.

3.1.1 Definitions of Refugees

1. The Geneva Convention of July 28, 1951 identifies refugee status as someone who “owing to a well-founded fear of being persecuted for the reasons of race, religion, nationality, member of a particular social group outside his or her nationality, that is unable, or owing to fear, is unwilling to avail him/herself to the protection of a country; or who is not having a nationality, or being outside the country of his/her habitual residence as a result of event, is unable or unwilling to return to his/her country home (United Nations, 1951:9)”

2. Afolayan (2003:66-68) “the Organisation for African Unity (OAU) now known as African Union (AU) in 1969 re-conceptualised the United Nations’ definition of refugee as “every person who owing to external aggression, occupation, foreign domination, or events seriously disturbing public order either in parts or as a whole of his/her country origin or nationality, is compelled to leave his/her place of habitual residence to seek refuge in another place outside his/her own country of origin or nationality”.

3. Cartagena of Central American States in 1984 declares persons who fled their homes country because of life, safety or freedom threatening by a generalize violence, foreign aggression, internal conflict, massive violation of human rights or other circumstances which seriously disturbing public order as refugees (Adedoyin 2012:4).

However, the definitions set the pace for the war victims’ cares, but underestimated the dynamics of refugees and internally displaced persons’ flows globally. The displaced populations are the defenseless civilians that flee from a war or combat zone for safety or safe haven. The socio-political crises in their countries are always responsible for their emergence and being protracted in nature. Their patterns and volumes undergo changes in terms of flights and repatriations (Afolayan, 2003:69).

3.2 Internally Displaced Persons

3.2.1 Internally Displaced Persons (IDPs)

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), the internally displaced persons (IDPs) are those who fled their homes for safe-haven within a country because of persecutions or threats of life that UN’s definition of displaced populations did not capture initially, which has now outnumbered the refugees globally. In other words, as events of war prosecutions are getting proliferated in different countries, a wider category of people that left their homes and moved to other parts of the same country are identified as war victims and declared internally displaced persons (IDPs). They flee their homes for safe haven within a territorial boundary of a country due to persecutions or threats of life.

That is, the United Nations' definition of refugees fails to accommodate the internally displaced persons and asylum seekers, because, they were seemingly perceived as victims that cannot be easily linked to a race, religion, or nationality persecution initially. The definitions of refugee by United Nations set the pace for war victims' cares, but fail to take cognisance or underestimated the dynamics of refugees and internally displaced persons globally. The patterns and volumes of the displaced population undergo changes in terms of flights and repatriations (Afolayan, 2003:69).

3.3 Refugees/Internally Displaced Persons in Africa

In the year 2000 alone, the humanitarian agencies' reports estimated internally displaced persons (IDPs) to be 25 million people, while refugees were 11.5 million. Unfortunately, out of 25 million estimated internally displaced persons, 15 million (60%) were Africans (Sessay, 2001: 26-29). Some of them were ironically denied access to humanitarian assistance or prevented from having life-saving cares from agencies, either by rebels or government security forces. Examples of these were in Nigeria-Biafra civil war, Liberia, Sierra Leone, Rwanda, etc. civil wars. That is, the United Nations' definitions of displaced populations fail to incorporate internally displaced persons (IDPs) proved are inconclusive. Any involuntary migration of people is regarded as vital consequence of insecurity or crisis situation that involves forceful movement of people from one area to another. The causes of involuntary movement or incessant flows of refugees and internally displaced persons (IDPs) in many regions are armed conflicts, political violence, human rights violations, and ethnic crises. The displaced populations are sometimes involved in cross-border crimes and armed conflicts proliferation. Their effects have continued to be having catastrophic consequences on citizens, communities, economies, infrastructures, and environment of the host countries (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

In Guinea alone, over 1 million refugees from Liberia and Sierra Leone were accommodated between 1989 and 2003. The rates at which their refugee crises occur called for sustainable plans if the peace and security would be achieved in the warring regions. Afolayan (2003:66) African continent has provided a good ground for refugee dynamics, flows and repatriations globally, and comparatively, massive and changes in the flows of refugees and internally displaced persons are extra-ordinary. The continent contributed the second largest volume of the world's refugees and highest repatriations, which therefore requires serious efforts from the global socio-political stakeholders, in terms of prevention and management (United Nations High Commissioners for Refugees, 2004:5).

Since existence of humanitarian law, the status of displaced population appears not to have been given much priority in reducing their sufferings and problems. The significance of humanitarian law in alleviating suffering conditions of the displaced populations, or war victims, who are in the hands of enemy, wounded, sick and had shipwrecked, or prisoners of war has not been given serious attentions. Humanitarian law makes cases for those who do not or no longer participating in war as best as possible. It strives to balance conflicting interest of the military necessity and humanitarian considerations. It protects life, health, properties and ensures respect for human dignity. The right to humanitarian assistance is recognised by the Conventions. The numbers of refugees and internally displaced persons (IDPs) were estimated as 17.5 million and 24 million in 1992 respectively across the globe (United Nations High Commissioners for Refugees, 2000:6).

While the wars have continuing to disable and kill many young people, the vulnerable groups bear the brunt and accounted for over 80% of negative consequences of the wars. The protracted nature of many political crises contributed to the feminization of poverty across many regions. Orphans and homeless children increased every day. Many children are directly or indirectly exposed to violent crimes. The proliferation of wars and humanitarian crises impairs physical and mental illness on children. Many children venture into unethical behaviours such as stealing, sex exploitation, and abuses of human rights due to frustrations in the refugees and internally displaced persons' camps (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020). They are denying of access to basic needs and used by armed groups as weapons of war. Incessant crises of refugee flows, internally displaced persons (IDPs) and involuntary migrations are regrettable consequences of socio-political crises and wars across the globe. Another way by which huge displaced population flows occur was when the crises from the neighbouring countries exacerbated by the initial source of conflicts (Adekanye, 2003:167). The cases of un-accompanying children separated from their parents by the wars are another social problem across many regions. The rebels are forcefully using the captured young displaced persons for war prosecution. "Illicit drugs, arms and weapons get proliferated easily across the regions, most especially, in Africa.

3.4 Repatriation of Displaced persons

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) repatriation is the returning of someone back to the country of origin. Or better still, it is an act of repatriating or a state of being repatriated. It is returning of citizens who have been away from his/her country of origin or home due to threat of life and crises. It could be voluntary or involuntary. But voluntary repatriation helps to achieve sustainable peace after a period of hostility.

Repatriation can be facilitated, encouraged, or promoted after a cessation from hostilities. Its ultimate aim is that displaced persons return home, settle, integrate, and contribute in the processes that built their society back after long terms of hostilities. It entails the use of the skills acquired during the hostilities in exile. Its successful reintegration of returnees determines the process of peace achievement. Refugees are repatriated for several reasons:

- if the prevailing conditions change in the country they fled (since refugees flee their country to escape individual persecution, their status may be reexamined if the situation changes);
- the host State may encourage repatriation if it can no longer afford the burden that the refugees represent;
- refugees may be forced to return to their country of origin because of various kinds of pressure.

With the help of political institutions, UNHCR encourages or guarantees lawful and voluntary repatriations.

3.5 The Returnees

Returnees are the former refugees and internally displaced persons who have returned from their asylum country or displaced positions to their country of origin or home, either by official repatriation or non-official repatriation of international community's peacebuilding programme. The returnees under this condition are quite different from those who migrated for other reasons than fear of persecutions and armed conflicts.

3.6 Reintegration

Reintegration is a process by which the former displaced population or ex-combatant becomes a member of his/her community or country of origin after a period of self exile due to the fear of persecutions or threat of armed conflicts. They are entitled to basic infrastructures, rights and legal protection, socio-political acceptance during their reintegration.

3.7 Combatants

The combatants or armed groups are those fighters that directly or indirectly displaced huge population from their homes. They include those who are officially or non-officially demobilised and rehabilitated through disarmament, demobilisation and rehabilitation programmes.

3.8 Causes and Trend of Flights

The recent fragile nature of many countries due to the problem of poor governance has made substantial global population feel unsecured; and socio-politically and economically deprived in the mix of abundance resources.

Many social crises are occurred and constituted the use of sophisticated weapons, child soldiers, girls' combatant, starvations, and destruction of lives and properties; which in the long-run brew poor socio-political and economic problems to many regions. The prospects of responsive governance and socio-political stability are hampered or reduced by incessant proliferation of humanitarian crises that damaged and devastated social conditions. They promote or sustain violent culture, undermine peaceful co-existence and rights of the citizens. The vulnerable groups are mostly paid for the social problems. Meanwhile, the refuge implies a bond of trust, loyalty, protection, and provision for assistance or... obligation to protect... and has signatory to a relevant international security treaties. The refugees are those individuals forced out of their homes country by the threats or persecution of life. They flee to alien countries where they can be protected due to threat of insecurity. Their flows were un-precedented before 1990s in Africa.

Schmeidi (1996:15-60) and Rutinwa (1998:143) state that " the two main causes of refugee flows in Africa are violation of human rights and political violence that had their roots in colonial legacies, ethno-religious sentiments, repressive regimes, communal disunities, rebellions and economic repressions. These calamitous factors lead to massive displacement of persons due to fears of genocide. It covers the flows and manners at which refugee flows took place in terms of sudden flights". Proliferation of small arms, forcible recruitment of children as child soldiers, sexual violence (sex as a weapon of war), killing and maiming of civilians, ethnic cleansing and genocide that endanger the life of people cause their sudden flights. The conflicts are more internal than inter-states. The civilians and non-fighters are by far worst affected by the wars, although, they are both at the risk of violent death or losing of livelihood. Such conflicts eroded states structure and legitimacy or steep deeper poverty and increase the risks of renewal of conflicts within the few years, and set the countries on down warding spiral of poverty, poor governance, humanitarian crisis, etc., (Cilliers, 2004).

Similarly, the internally displaced persons (IDPs) flee their homes for safe-haven within a country due to persecutions or threats of life that UN's definition of displaced populations was unable to captured, which has now out-numbered the refugee numbers globally. In the year 2000 alone, the humanitarian agencies' reports estimated internally displaced persons to be 25 million people, while refugees were 11.5 million people. Ironically, 15 million (60%) of the estimated internally displaced persons were Africans (Sessay, 2001:29). Many of them were unfortunately denied access to humanitarian assistance and prevented from having life-saving cares from humanitarian agencies.

Examples of these were in Nigeria-Biafra civil war, Liberia, Sierra Leone, Rwanda, among other civil wars. In other words, the United Nations' definition of refugees fails to accommodate internally displaced persons and asylum seekers; because, they were seemingly perceived as victims that cannot be easily linked to a race, religion, or nationality persecution initially.

As events unfolded, a wider category of people that left their homes and moved to another part of the same country (internally displaced persons) was later accepted as war victims. This means the United Nations' definition of displaced populations that fails to incorporate internally displaced persons (IDPs) proves inconclusive. That is, any involuntary migration of people is regarded as vital consequence of insecurity or crisis that involves forceful movement of people from one area to the other. The causes of involuntary movement or incessant flows of refugees and internally displaced persons (IDPs) in many region are armed conflicts, political violence, human rights violations and ethnic crises. The displaced populations in Africa involved in cross-border crimes and armed conflicts. The crises of humanitarian assistance created by the incessant and protracted civil wars the regions require serious efforts from the global socio-political stakeholders (United Nations High Commissioners for Refugees, 2004:5).

4.0 CONCLUSION

In this unit, the discussion on how global injustice and social crises have been degenerated into huge displacement of people and their features are the focus of the lecture. In achieving the desired objectives of preventing and managing displacement of persons, the terms refugee, internally displaced persons, their causes, flights, trends, repatriation, etc. are unveiled. The threats constituted by displaced persons to host communities and nations were also examined.

5.0 SUMMARY

The extent at which the humanitarian crises through the wars or proxy wars degenerated into displacement of huge persons and stun the global social insecurity was behind this study. In the unit, the terms refugee and internally displaced persons, consequences and ordeals are designed for the students to understand why and how people are being forced out of their homes. The activities of refugees on cross border crimes are also discussed.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Discuss the following terms: refugee and internally displaced persons;
2. What are the causes and consequences of the displacement of persons? Discuss.
3. With emphasis on Africa! Discuss the refugee situation.
4. Proffer solutions to the emancipation of refugee and internally displaced person in Africa

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Adedoyin, A. 2014. Nigeria-Biafra Civil War and Law of Armed Conflict. In Egbewole, W.O. 2014. Journal of Society for Peace Studies and Practice, Ibadan, John Archers. Vol. 1, No3, Pp 212-229.
- Adekeye, J.B et .al (2003) Humanitarian Challenges and Africa's Refugee and Displacement Problems. African Journal of Peace and Conflict Studies.
- Amnesty International. (2008). *Liberia: Greater Efforts Needed for Reintegration of Former Female Fighters*. Amnesty International Website (Accessed in 2010).
- Geneva Convention, (1949). Basic Rules and their Additional Protocols. United Nations Reports.
- International Committee of Red Cross, (2004). Public Information Division, 19 Avenue de la Paix, CH-1202 Geneva, Switzerland.
- Olatunbosun, A. (2004). "The International Committee of Red Cross (ICRC)". Nigeria, Obafemi Awolowo Ile-Ife University.
- Sesay, I. et al.2009. Post-war regimes and state reconstruction in Liberia and Sierra Leone. Council for the Development of Social Science Research in Africa, Angle IV, Senega
- UNCHR, (2004). *Stability Returning to Liberia but Challenges Remain, UN Report*. Retrieved May 31st , 2007 from <http://www.un.org/apps/neas/stories.asp>
- United Nations Department of Public Information Africa, (2005). Renewal Vol. 18 No.4.
- United Nations, (2000). Optional Protocol to the Convention on the Rights of the Child in the Involvement of Children in Armed Conflict, CRC-OP-CAC, New York, United States.
- United Nations. (2010). General Assembly Report on the Activities of the Office of Internal Oversight Services, Sixty-Fourth Session
www.globalwitness.org/campaigns/conflict/post-conflict/liberia
www.unitedhumanrights.org/genocide/genocide-in-sudan.htm
www.unitedhumanrights.org/genocide/genocide-in-sudan.htm

UNIT 5 IMPACTS OF WAR ON LOCAL COMMUNITY**CONTENTS**

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Meaning/Definition of Impact of War
 - 3.2 Impact of War on Security and Society
 - 3.3 War and Security of Lives/Properties
 - 3.4 Prevention/Management of Impacts of War
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

This unit introduces the Impact of war on security and society to the students of this field. This is important because it would enable the students to know the consequences of war on peaceful co-existence and development at large. There is no doubt the war is destructive in nature, and every society needs to develop early warning signals and preventive diplomacy mechanisms of war for them to remain peaceful and attain necessary development.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- Know the consequences of war situation on society;
- Identify negative consequences of war and its features;
- Ensure and maintain social order in the societies; and
- Appreciate the presence of peace and security in development orientation.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT**3.1 Meaning/Definition of Impact of War**

The impacts of war are effects or consequences of war prosecuted against the humanity. No matter the efforts in managing a war situation, its impacts are always abound and obvious in the societies. The attendant consequences always generated a great concerned, because, it destroys political, economy, socio-cultural, psychological, ecological, health, and development.

Their attributes or features are disagreement, disunity, distrusts, collapse of economy system, threat or worsen of health condition, displacement of people or mass refugees, environmental degradation, destruction of land and agricultural produce and other resources. That is why; the attention of experts on the field must be drawn on demographic and economic consequences of vulnerable groups in war situation. People such as women, children, aged and physically challenged persons suffer great consequences of war most. Their vulnerability is hitherto identified as diseases, poverty, starvation, rape and sexual violence, etc.

There are impacts of war on domestic and educational system in society as well. Their effects are always widely felt, which can be in the long-term or short-term. The security agencies, particularly, the soldiers experience more grievous pain in a war situation than civilians. The trauma caused by the atrocities of war suffers huge civilian population and creates extensive emotional and psychological disturbances to them. In fact, the effects of war like traumas, mass destruction of life and property have long term effects on society. Other negative consequences are destruction of infrastructure, public health provision, education, social order, economy distortion, etc.

3.2 Impact of War on Community

The specific impacts of war on social system are unveiled through the narrow lenses of political, economy, socio-cultural, psychological, ecological, health, development, domestic, education, emancipation of Displaced persons, etc.

3.2.1 Impact of War on Political System

The armed conflict or war destroys socio-political system of society, and eliminates future institutional elements or leaders. It sows seeds of discontented, bitterness and divisions among the members. It destroys or alters human futuristic attainment and transposes mutual understanding to un-favourable situations. Its consequences sometimes are proliferating inequality within the social system. It makes social structures or elements to be vulnerable and creates insecurity situation along the line. War threatens, intimidates, and results into injuries, destruction of lives and properties. Its attributes such as repression, terrorism, genocide, coups d'état, civil strife, ethno-religious conflicts and insurgency destroy social principle laden of peaceful co-existence.

The local, national, and international insecurity is often caused by protracted armed conflicts. The achievement of sustainable peace and stability is always demand much effort and resources. The effects of war demand disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, reintegration, resettlement, re-unification of family, reconstruction, etc. During the war, the existence of governing body or institution and infrastructure facilities are always destroyed. The situation is governing system is corrupted, full of nepotism, lack of trust and confidence in one another, lack of transparency, non-accountability of activities, public opinion is ignored, huge unemployment, poor service delivery, collapse of judicial system and injustice marginalization, indiscipline and excesses or recklessness, poverty, etc. The vulnerable are defenceless and hopeless. They fall prey to their predators, rapist, exploitation, and exclusiveness in society. Mass displacement of persons and refugee problems are parts of the effects of armed conflicts. It erodes both local and international orders, relationships, and multilateral institutions' viability.

3.2.2 Impact of War on Economy System

The war or armed conflict is always having profound short and long-term consequences on economy development, resources, and social institutions of the warring societies. It destroys local, national, and international economies by skewing their productivity abilities or activities toward hopelessness situations such as displacement of people, acquisitions of destructive weapon and substances. The post-war economy functions in spurt and intermittent. War distorts or collapse economy. In a war situation, the public and private assets and resources are depleted, and physical social infrastructures, human capital, economy, security, and labour are destroyed or wasted. It disrupts or interrupts trade and economic activities in local, national and international. The banking system, merchants and trade systems or markets are collapsed. Currency flows indiscriminate on the street and creates inflation. Public, private, humanitarian agencies, domestic and foreign entrepreneur or investments are scarce or reduced. The possibilities of encouraging smoothening economic activities are threatened or frightened, because, available resources are diverted on war prosecution. The arms and ammunitions get proliferated within the social system and constitute insecurity. Financial capabilities meant for the long-term economy plans, agricultural processes, and developmental programmes are diverted on relief materials and post-conflict reconstruction activities. No reasonable food production would be undertaken. The road that ensures easy transportation of goods and services are destroyed.

3.2.3 Impact of War on Socio-cultural System

War destroys socio-cultural fabric system or coping mechanisms of any society. The societal populace suffers the effects of war more once their social norms and values are collapsed and cannot functioned well again in post-war era. They live endangered life, and returning back to their normal ways of life during or after the war is always difficult. The armed conflict destroys the family kinships and relationships, and many who have been separated from one another for long term may have imbibed different world views, attitudes, or characters that culminated into changes in reactions. It exacerbates divisions among the individuals and social institutions. It increases intra or inter-groups insecurity, hostility, discord and disrupt relationship. It prevents people from meeting their basic needs through a communalism. Most especially, the vulnerable groups bear the brunt of most armed conflicts. The armed conflict imposes special or huge burdens on female gender, children, aged ones, and disabilities. Sometime, little children and women are forcefully drafted into horrible soldiering activities during the war. Numbers of orphans and homeless children are multiplied during the war. War impairs physical and mental disorders on people, and brews violent culture everywhere in societies. The cases of deformity, amputation, rapes, armed robbery, kidnapping, spread of viral diseases, prostitution, homeless, psychological disorder, huge unemployment, etc. have effects on society.

3.2.4 Psychological Impact of War

The impact of armed conflict on human psychic is at the level of reasoning -in terms of trauma, most especially, on children, females, aged people, disabilities, and ex-combatants. The internally displaced persons and refugees' ordeals have grave consequences for human social interaction and nature. The civilian, most especially, the women, children, aged people, and disabilities bear the brunt of most war psychological effects. It militarized the social institutional structures and imposes burdens on the people. The armed conflict impairs physical and mental problems that fuel violent nature in human.

3.2.5 Ecological Impact of War

This is a situation whereby the physical and biological components of environment are negatively affected by the war. The war adverse effect on environment is destructive in terms of destruction of organisms, vegetations, human, animals, agricultural products (crops and livestock), farmland, etc.

The militant or militia activities such as pipelines vandalism, kidnapping, assassination, etc. are parts of negative consequences of armed conflict on environment. The forest and other ecological components indiscriminate experience disturbances in their natural existence due to wars, which are always having adverse effects on the livings and growths of ecosystems. The war is always engendered famine, drought, and starvation in an area it was being carried out. War activities destroyed many forests that are rich in natural resources through the world. During the war, the farmers are usually abandoned their agricultural activities for either safety or war prosecution. Hence, there will be no serious food productions during/immediately after the war.

3.2.6 Health Impact of War

The adverse effects of armed conflict on the health system of societies and conditions of living organisms cannot be underestimated, in terms of dilapidated or destruction of health facilities or wastage of lives, spreading of diseases, virus, ordeal of refugees and internally displaced persons, and destructions of ecosystem. Indulging in prostitutions in order to survive by the women in the warring areas as well spreading of diseases, HIV virus, and Aids are parts of the effects of war. Due to war situations, people will lack potable water, drugs, and other health basic necessities contributing to the general illness of people in the affected areas of the armed conflicts. The main water treatment plant would be destroyed and left people without potable water. The resources that meant for better health care programmes would be invariably diverted to war prosecutions, war equipments acquisition, and peace missions. Health facilities, centres or hospitals are destroyed. In war situations, explosion of bombs and its effects spread environmental hazard across the land. Many people would be deformed, amputated; the female genders would be raped or experiencing genital mutilations.

3.2.7 Impact of War on Development

The armed conflict consequences on development activities are bi-facials in nature, which could be positive or negative. The positive aspect of armed conflict is in post-conflict relationships or situations where the lessons must have been learnt from the past bitter experiences. That is, sometimes, a conflicting situation helps to build mutual understanding and better relationship in post-war era, just as it is in the recent socio-political situation of Rwanda after the war. Burton (1987:137-138) states that “conflict like sex is an essential creative element in human relationship.

It is a means of change and articulating social values, welfare, security, justice, and opportunities for development. Indeed... conflict like sex is meant to be enjoyed. It sometimes inspires innovative ideas and developmental competitiveness. It is a mechanism or paradigm of ensuring justice and protection of rights, if it is constructively carried out. On the other hands, conflict can be destructive. Momah (1991:59) state that “armed conflict in its totality is evil... It destroys or ruins, maims, changes boundaries, topples government of the people, brutalises human psyche or wrecks precious family togetherness, and most often, regrettably sows the seed of discords”. In other words, war can be destructive or caused disunity/distrust among the social elements. It can also brew better and mutual understanding between or among the conflicting parties in the end. Conflict is natural. No baby was borne unless a man and woman engage in conflict.

3.2.8 War Impact on Educational Virtues and Values

In confused atmosphere of violence, attitudes and characters of youth are hardly worthy of emulation in terms of laziness, looting, engagement in thieve or armed robberies, miscreants, prostitution, etc. The war situation always mold or mortgage their conscience for atrocities. Many of them lose interest in educational virtues and values. They hardly delight in thorough academic exercises and involve in academic fraud, deviance, and laziness that encouraged examination malpractices and cultism. Reading culture within such society is found wanting. Their educational facilities suffered immensely during the war. School buildings and facilities are willfully destroyed or turn to military training camps. Large numbers of school age children are out of schools. In the post-war, much effort is needed to provide necessary school materials and infrastructural facilities.

3.2.9 Emancipation of Displaced Persons

The Geneva Convention of July 28, 1951 identifies refugee status as someone who “owing to a well-founded fear of being persecuted for the reasons of race, religion, nationality, member of a particular social group outside his or her nationality, is unable, or owing to fear, is unwilling to avail him/herself to the protection of a country; or who is not having a nationality, or being outside the country of his/her habitual residence as a result of an event, is unable or unwilling to return to his/her country home (United Nations, 1951:9)”.

Afolayan (2003:66-68) the Organisation for African Unity (OAU) that is now known as African Union (AU) in 1969 re-conceptualised the United Nations' definition of refugee as "every person who owing to the external aggression, occupation, foreign domination, or events seriously disturbing public order either in parts or as a whole country of his/her origin or nationality, is compelled to leave his/her place of habitual residence to seek refuge in another place outside his/her own country of origin or nationality". Similarly, the Cartagena of Central American States in 1984 declares persons who fled their homes country because of life, safety or freedom threatening by a generalize violence, foreign aggression, internal conflict, massive violation of human rights or other circumstances which seriously disturbing public order as refugees (Adedoyin, 2012:4). The displaced populations are the defenseless civilians that flee from a war or combat zone for safety or safe haven. The socio-political crises are always responsible for their emergence and being protracted in nature. Their patterns and volumes undergo changes in terms of flights and repatriations (Afolayan, 2003:69).

During the war, many people are displaced either internally or become refugees in their neighbouring countries. Their ordeals are always grievousness, because, their flights are sudden and unprepared. The orphans and homeless children among them increase in numbers every day, and many of them are exposed to crimes or violent acts. The proliferation of wars and humanitarian crises impair their physical and mental illness to the extent that they ventured into any unethical behaviours like stealing, sexual exploitation, and abuses of rights in their camps. On many occasions, they are starved and maltreated. Many limb were amputated, genitals were mutilated, died, tortured or raped. They spread across the borders and engulfed severe humanitarian crises on their host countries. For example, the postulation of refugees and internally displaced persons' numbers in Africa show that armed conflicts were responsible for the massive displacement of persons. Another way by which huge displaced population flows occurred was through the crises of neighbouring countries (Adekanye, 1996:167).

3.3 War and Security of Lives/Properties

Since violence begets violence, the impacts of wars on societies among other things are destructions of live and properties that worth millions of persons. Such impacts could as well divide into two dimensions. That is, the impact of war on society and domestic elements like vulnerable groups, which are:

3.3.1 Violence against Vulnerable Groups

This impact identifies domestic violence as one of the major challenges facing vulnerable groups such as women, children, aged people, and disabilities in societies. For example, the vulnerable groups are sometimes abandoned by their heads of family and make them liable to different circumstances such as mal-nutrition, mal-treatment, trafficking and force labours, especially, in the developing nations. The violence suffered by vulnerable groups is sometimes retained and showed in their physical appearance, in terms of scars and psychological effects. They are sometimes exchanged their rights and values for basic needs to survive. Some abandoned spouses and ladies end up in prostitution or engage sexual exploitation and harassment from men. In most cases, they have no opportunity to attain basic education that can improve their knowledge, and good health services that can better the conditions of life is lacking.

Their means of education remain social interactions or relations with their neighbours, which war is always denied. Some of them become miscreants along the line. Issue of divorce is another negative experience of some women. Many children wander around without concrete missions. They have been separated from their parents by war situations. During the wars, the women attend to the sick, wounded persons, buried the dead, and participated in some initiatives that brought about peace. Their experience tells the untold suffering conditions of the female gender passing through in the war situations, where they participate in dual capacities as victims and actors that fend for the families and society. They helped to maintain social fabric system and replaced some destroyed social services. They are primes advocate of peace and as well suffered a lot in war situations.

3.3.2 War and Insecurity

Security is a strategic coping mechanism that must be designed to ensure peaceful co-existence and development at large. It guarantees absence of fears, threats, anxieties, tensions, and the apprehensions of losing life, liberty, property, goals, values, and so forth. It is very essential to every sustainable development attainment. Security is a pre-condition for people's improvement, particularly the poor. However, the concept of security is beyond a fundamental military activity that aims at protecting a territory and its sovereignty. The two types of security are traditional and human security. The emphasis would be more on traditional security than social/human security. Meanwhile, human security encompasses protection of lives and property. It is a pre-condition for people's improvement, protection of human rights and provision of basic human needs.

In other words, security is always compromised in war situation. Different crimes and atrocities such as killings, kidnappings, robberies, destructions of properties, etc. are possible. The rogue attitudes, behaviours, characters, corrupt practices, political violence and thuggeries, armed robbers, assassins or hire killers, 419-scams, etc. could as well be the effects of the war.

3.3.3 War and Society

Since society encompasses different categories of people, the assemblages of frustrated members of society are directly or indirectly brewed insecurity into the societies if nothing tangible is not in place for them after the war. In other words, society is the receiving end of its violence effects. The way a society is structured determines what would be obtainable, in terms of functionalities, peace, security, cultural traits, and socio-political practices. The reflections or mirror effects of the war on social activities are violence. In other words, the families or homes are the smallest social components of society. Most of the wayward members of society are the tools in the hands of miscreant leaders or religious fundamentalists, in terms of exercising of violence. To build society back after the war required the disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, reintegration, reunification of family, reconstruction, etc. programmes.

3.4 Prevention/Management of War Impacts

The effect of war is not doubt needed preventive mechanisms or management for it not to happen again. The following mechanisms are proffered preventive and management mechanisms of war impacts:

1. Disarmament, Demobilisation, Re-integration, Rehabilitation, Reconstruction, Re-settlement, Reconciliation, and Reunification

There is need for proper disarmament, demobilization, reintegration, rehabilitation, reconstruction, re-settlement, reconciliation, reunification, etc. of all the displaced populations, sacked communities, and ex-combatants in post-war. Unfortunately, these are hardly carried out properly in many post-war situations and snowball to severe adverse effects of war. Those that are yet to be reintegrated outnumber those that have been reintegrated. Every post-war situation must take cognizance of this.

2. Rule of Law and Justice

The rule of law and justice in post-war era entrenches social equity and fairness. Every victim of the war deserves justice and equal participations in rebuilding their society back.

The post-conflict judicial system needs to be strengthened and re-structured in such that justice and rule of law prevail. The violators of law and order during the war need to be prosecuted, and the law of the land should be supreme. Everybody should be equal before the law and facilitating peaceful co-existence.

3. Early Warning Signal and Preventive Diplomacy Mechanism

This should be incorporated into the war impact management and post-war peacebuilding. The analysis of the early warning signals provides an insight for any emerging conflict. An effective early warning system combines historical/socio-political information situations in society to forecast the dynamics of any developing conflict that can lead to war. It is an effective mechanism that addresses traces of crises. It serves as preventive diplomacy that tempers perceived war factors. It helps in making decision on peace generating factors or initiatives. It is an overall process of addressing the perceived emergence of conflicts. It encompasses activities that prevent conflict from escalating into war. Its activities include confidence-building, trust, fact finding, prevention, etc.

4. Civic Education

There is need for good civic educational system in post-era for both old and young survivors of war. The need for civic education cannot be over-emphasised, because, it helps to instill in citizens the sense of national consciousness/cohesion, belongingness, duty, responsibility and respect for rights of other citizens. It also helps to produce leadership roles with appropriate knowledge peace and genuine attitude. The knowledge gained from civic education would instill respect for law and order, and willingness to take part in developmental activities in society through joint problem solving approach.

5. Transparency and General Accountability

For sustainable peace to be on course there is need for transparency and general accountability of the people's activities. This mechanism should not be lacking in post-war activities. If this is not taken cognizance, it can make a war situation protracted in nature. The assets of political appointees and stakeholders even in the crises situations need to be made known while in the office. The income and expenditure of the societal activities should be monitored, verified, and also presented on timely bases through a conduct bureau. There should be post-war impact assessment that can signify both positive and negative impacts of war.

6. Human Security and Infrastructural Facilities

In post-war peacebuilding, the emphasis of the society affected by war should be on provision for social/human security and infrastructural facilities, and not solely on traditional security. This is because the concept of security has beyond a fundamental military activity that aims at protecting territorial boundaries and nation's sovereignty today. Social/Human security encompasses the protection of lives and property, which is a pre-condition for people's improvement, protection of human rights and provision for basic human needs. It guarantees absence of fear, threat, anxiety, tension and the apprehension of losing life, liberty, property, goals, values, and so on. Human security is very essential to any post-war situation and sustainable development processes, particularly, in the less developed nations. It is, therefore, highly needed in post-war era.

7. System Improvement

The socio-political system destroyed by the war in the post-conflict era needs to be rebuilt, overhauled, and transformed. This is because its agencies require commitment, efficiency, and effectiveness for a peaceful co-existence. The post-war should be devoid of ethnic agitation, sentiment, segregation, oppression, classism, tribalism, nepotism, and sectionalism. There should be better orientation programme that sees political offices as service to humanity and not opportunity to acquire wealth at expense of masses. There should be no room for self-seeking or selfishness in governance. The socio-economic and political systems should be reformed, and all the factors that led to the crises initially need to be trashed-out and managed amicably. There should be total transformation in governance.

8. Commitment and Efficiency

The post-war stakeholders or leadership in governance and communities need to be more committed and efficient in all their activities, if the aim and objectives of post-war peacebuilding will be achieved. There is need for leaders that are sensitive and mindful of their citizens' desires. The interests of the leaders should not be on what to make or gain from the system than how they would improve their system. That is why; there are always series of allegations of corrupt practices against the top government officers in many post-war situations. In the post-war era, there is need for rebuilding of the society and nation.

9. Job Opportunity and Poverty Alleviation Programme

Every post-war situation always experiences massive un-employment and unemployable citizens. The unemployed people need to be fully or actively engaged in productive activities that prevent recurrence of warring situation. This is because many of the able men and women in post-war are always jobless, and such population could be as well used to undermine the goals of post-war peacebuilding. They need to be engaged in full productive activities so as prevent them from becoming dissidents that help other rebels in another region prosecute war against the governments. There should be effective and reliable poverty alleviation programmes, where the unemployed members of the society can acquire skills on vocational jobs and agricultural practices. There could be soft loans for them to engage in entrepreneur activities.

10. Gender Sensitivity and Women Empowerment

In post-war era, there is need for gender sensitivity and women empowerment. Women should not be less educated, and have less access to good productive resources. Or occupy few decision making positions compare to their male counterparts. This is because the war is always brought about the untold suffering conditions of the female genders where they participated as victims and actors, fending for themselves and their families. All the development partners must ensure policies that are responsive for women's needs for them to participate in traditional and non-traditional activities (Omeje, 2009:116). The problems of female genders need to be addressed in post-war situation. Empowering female genders is essential to human development objectives such as poverty-reduction. The post-war political body and its partners need to invest in confidence-building, knowledge acquisition, and self-esteem of girls, and provide viable alternatives economic survival. The exploitation of women and girls needs to be prevented or managed properly.

11. Nationalist Leaders

Every post-war society needs nationalist leaders that can project the image of their society without ethnic sentiment and prejudice. The nationalist leaders that can propel the wheel of their society for sustainable peace and development, and have ability to inspire confidence building, trust, and support among the populace for peace and development actualisations are needed. The leaders who are national conscious and ready to facilitate positive changes in society are needed.

12. Good Governance

In post-war era, good governance is necessary because the essence of governance is to guarantee a congenial environment where the aspirations and lawful activities can be carried out freely without intimidation or harassment so as to achieve stability and development. It is a pragmatic channel for attainment of sustainable peace and tranquility. Diamond (2004:222) good governance is the ability or willingness to apply public resources effectively to generate public good and benefit to the entire community. This includes physical structure in terms of roads, bridges, ports, sanitation, potable water, electric power, and telecommunication. Others are public transport, socio-economic, and political infrastructures that ensure schools, clinics, markets, courts, vaccination programme, and improved agricultural techniques, neutral and capable state bureaucracy. All these require dedicated and charismatic leaders, transparency, and accountability, the rule of law, public participatory and dialogue in policy formulation and implementation.

13. True Democratic System

Every post-war society needs to entrench a true democratic system such as representative/liberal democracy, where quality service delivery, accountability, transparency, the rule of law, system improvement, and good governance are guaranteed or be its watchdog for its aim and objectives on peacebuilding to be achieved. Bruce (1993:5-11) democratic culture affects the way in which the leaders manage their conflicts by following the law rather than the group leaders, and tolerating the differences among individuals. The liberal leaders face institutionalised constraints that impede their capacity to mobilise state's resources for war without the consent of the broad spectrum of interests. The credibility of the liberal states allows them to negotiate for sustainable peace. The participation of the public in open debates sends clear and reliable information regarding the intentions of the state. But in non-democratic society, there would be mistrust and unwillingness to make concessions that prevent war.

4.0 CONCLUSION

Indeed, almost every issue on impacts of war has been discussed in this unit. The discussions of armed conflict and its surrounding factors would avail students a clear understanding of effects of war and how people should interact or relate within their social system without causing dysfunctional situations.

The knowledge of war and its attributes or features provide people opportunities and skills on how to handle any conflicting situations successfully, which is the ultimate aim of this unit. In other words, conflict is a fact of life and inevitable issue. The ability to prevent from turning to violence or war is required from every human being. The negative effects of war set society backward. All hands must be on deck to prevent every conflicting situation from turning to violence.

5.0 SUMMARY

The impacts of war were discussed in this unit. However, conflict is a natural inevitable or unavoidable phenomenon. But the ability of man to manage or prevent it from violence or war is required from everybody. The best way to handle any conflicting situation from not allows it to turn violence or war is by employing constructive multi-dimensional social approach. Emphasis should be on social/human security than traditional uniform security personnel recruitment. Traditional uniform security system beget violence, violence beget war and its impacts

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. What are the effects of war on society?
2. State and discussed the impacts of armed conflict.
3. In what ways can prevent the effects of war on society.
4. What are Impacts of war on security institutions of a society?

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Adedoyin, A. (2014). Nigeria-Biafra Civil War and Law of Armed Conflict. In Egbewole, W.O. 2014. *Journal of Society for Peace Studies and Practice*, Ibadan, John Archers. Vol. 1, No3, Pp 212-229.
- Adedoyin, A (2014) Am Impact Assessment of Post-conflict Reintegration in Liberia. A Ph.D Thesis in the Peace and conflict Studies Programme, Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Ibadan, Nigeria
- Adesanya, A. (2005). Impact of Conflict on the Destruction, Dispersal and Development of African Art Traditions. In Albert, I.O. (2005). *Perspectives on Peace and Conflict in Africa: an essays*, in honour of Abdulsalami, A. Peace and Conflict Studies Programme, Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Schmid, A. P. (1998). *Thesaurus and Glossary of Early Warning and Conflict Prevention Terms* Erasmus University: Synthesis Foundation.

- Amnesty International. (2008). *Liberia: Greater Efforts Needed for Reintegration of Former Female Fighters*. Amnesty International Website (Accessed in 2010).
- Awolowo, O. (1967). *Crisis and Conflict in Nigeria*. In Kirk-Greene, A.H.M. (1971) *Crisis and Conflict in Nigeria 1967-1970*, Vol.1. Daily Time, May 2nd.
- Farah, D and Braun, S. (2007). *Merchant of Death: Money, Guns, Planes, and the Man Who Makes War Possible*. Published by John Wiley and Sons, Inc. Hoboken, New Jersey, USA and Canada
- Geneva Convention, (1949). Basic Rules and their Additional Protocols, United Nations Reports.
- International Committee of Red Cross, (2004). Public Information Division, 19 Avenue de la Paix, CH-1202 Geneva, Switzerland.
- Mills, K and Norton, R.J. (2005). *Refugee and Security in the Great Lakes Region of Africa*. Journal of Civil Wars, Vol. 5.
- Nwolise, O.B.C. (2004). "The Sudan Crisis and Contemporary Peace Process": Formula for the Ultimate Solution. A Paper in Foreign Relations Experience Discussion, Nigeria, University of Ibadan.
- Odinkalu, C. (2004). "Darfur: the New Name of Genocide", Nigeria Vanguard Newspaper September 24th. Pp25.
- Olatunbosun, A. (2004). "The International Committee of Red Cross (ICRC)". Nigeria, Obafemi Awolowo Ile-Ife University.
- Omeje, K. (2009). *War to Peace Transition*. Conflict Intervention and Peacebuilding in Liberia. University Press of America, Inc, United Kingdom, Estover Road Plymouth PL67 py.
- Omorogbe, Y. (2006). *Expanding Horizons of International Humanitarian Law*. www.ecowas.int
- Popoola, A.O. (2005). *The International Criminal Court's Regime and Crimes against Humanity*. A Paper Commission for Presentation at the Sensitisation Workshop on the Intervention Criminal Court, Nigeria institute of Advanced Legal Studies, Abuja.
- Ray, E and Schaap, W. H. (2003). *Covert Action; the Roots of Terrorism*. The Institute For Media Analysis, Inc. Ocean Press, New York, Melbourne.
- Secretary General, (2008). *United Nations General Assembly 20004 Report*. Assistance to Refugees, Returnees and Displaced Persons in Africa.
- Torrelli, M (2003). *From Humanitarian Assistance to Intervention on Humanitarian Ground*, UNHCR Paper.
- United Nations, (2000). Optional Protocol to the Convention on the Rights of the Child in the Involvement of Children in Armed Conflict, CRC-OP-CAC, New York, United States.

MODULE 3 LAW OF WAR AND ARMED CONFLICT

Unit 1	Origin of State and Law
Unit 2	Conceptualisation of Human/Social Security
Unit 3	International Humanitarian Law and Armed Conflict
Unit 4	War Crime and War Guilty
Unit 5	Impact of War on International Community

UNIT 1 ORIGIN OF STATE AND LAW**CONTENTS**

1.0	Introduction
2.0	Objectives
3.0	Main Content
3.1	Origin of State and Law
3.2	International Law
3.3	History/Origin of Law of Nation and International Law
3.4	Criticisms on International Law
4.0	Conclusion
5.0	Summary
6.0	Tutor-Marked Assignment
7.0	References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

This unit seeks to introduce the students to the origin of state and law, international law, law of nation and dynamic of international law with criticisms. The study will enable the students to have knowledge on genesis of international law and its developmental stages. It would also avail the students on how changes in the international law are given unique fluidity. Various forms of arguments or criticisms on international law by the scholars are discussed. Since the fall of Berlin Wall, in 1989, the global system has been witnessing series of changes that affect its mode of operandi in doing things which have directly or indirectly made the global system ravage by wars. The question of sovereignty and independence of nations in the face of international military forces prosecuting asymmetric wars and civil/proxy wars in the developing nations was as well discussed.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

At the end of this unit, student should be able to:

- discuss origin of state and law;
- explain the meaning of international law;
- distinguish the features of international law;
- take cognizance of changes in international law since nineteenth century;
- discuss the sources of nation and international law; and
- explain the political influence of international community on nations' matters

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Origin of State and Law

According to social contract theory, the emergence of society and government was as a result of the need to ensure morality and protect collective interest through the state law. Its view was that citizens' moral and political obligations should dependent on contract or agreement and not on the state of nature. This exposition was presented and defended by Thomas Hobbes (1588-1679), John Locke (1632-1704), and Jean-Jacques Rousseau (1712-1778). The theory was dominantly on moral and political development of modern society in seventeen century.

Thomas Hobbes (1588-1679) and Social Contract

Hampton (1986) Hobbes' social contract opined that political authority and obligation should be based on agreement of becoming a member of society. He gave the exposition while querying the monarchs and parliamentarians domination in the early modern England. According to him, nobody have right to exert authority over others without contract. The monarchs need to cede absolute authority for the society to survive. His theory was founded on the hypothetical state of nature that gives rise to morality and politics published in 1651. Hobbes stated that everything in universe has nothing else other than matter in motion that extended behaviours. He sees human nature as an essential complicated organic machine that responds to stimulus through the law of nature (Celeste, 2014).

On moral term, he described objective state of affairs as reflections of individual tastes and preferences. It inferred human as organism that necessarily and exclusively self-interested and responded mechanistically to desires and repels things they averse. Their dos or don'ts are solely motivated by the desires to satisfy themselves. Although they are infinitely appetitive and genuinely concerned about themselves, they possess rational capacity to pursue desires efficiently.

It recommends political authority for society and justifies political obligation over self-interest since the state of nature is unbearably brutal and unavoidable war. The theory evolves two distinguishable attributes. The first was to establish collective reciprocal of renouncing the rights against the law of nature and imbue or assemble persons with authority to enforce the contracts (Celeste, 2014). Punishment for the breaches of the contract because of albeit self-interest, reasons to adjust artifice morality and justice in particular were compacted, which guaranteed the sovereign not to be overawed. The sovereign authority is the superior convention that forces individuals to conform. Morality, politics, society, and other things that come with 'commodious living' are purely conventional. Prior to social contracts, nothing is immoral or unjust - anything goes (Hampton, 1986). After the establishment of contracts, the civil society was made possible and human is expected to keep promises and cooperate with one another. In other words, people need to learn on how to submit themselves to the sovereign of state, which is government.

John Locke (1632-1704) and Social Contract

John Locke based his arguments on nature of men's relationship in authority and clarified why there is civil society and government. He refuted the position of Robert Filmier on patriarchal that stated "political authority was derived from the religious authority (Divine Right of Kings)", which was dominant in England's seventeenth-century (Celeste, 2014). According to Locke, the state of nature and natural condition of humankind are perfect and complete liberty to conduct oneself as one best sees fit, that is, free from the interference of others. The state of nature, although, was a state of no civil authority or government to punish transgressors of laws. It was a state of morality but pre-political. People were assumed to be equal and equally capable of discovering and bounded by the state of nature. There was no civil authority. Once there is war, the war continues without control, which was one of the reasons why the state of nature was abandoned, and civil society and government were established. The state of nature allows people to wage war without remorse. There was no civil power to appeal against the wrong doings.

Hampton (1986) the state of nature paves way for individual accumulation of private property based on capacity (primitive accumulation). Property was one of the linchpins of Locke's arguments on social contract. He argued that the state of nature was not a condition for persons, as it was stated by Hobbes.

Rather, it was populated by procreations and families. The societies were based on voluntary agreements that care for individuals. They were moral but not political. Political society came to being when the individuals represent their families in the state of nature and entrusted executive power to monitor the events of society and punish the transgressors of the law of nature by subjecting them to majority wishes (sovereign authority). Having created sovereign society and government through contracts, they gained three things which were lacked in the state of nature, that is, laws, judges, and executive power necessarily to enforce the law and maintain the social stability (Celeste, 2014). Through sovereign authority, commonwealth, lives, and liberty are protected. Consequently, misconduct in society is a breaching of contract or pact of state law signed by citizens with the political leaders.

Jean-Jacques Rousseau (1712-1778) and Social Contract

Jean-Jacques Rousseau's theory on origin and foundation of inequality among men and normative or ideal social contract explained how civil society and government came to being. The theory first account was on moral and political evolution of human nature over time from the state of nature to modern society. The second account provides the means by which the problems created by modern society can be alleviated through contract. The theory stated that the state of nature was a peaceful and quixotic period when people live in solitary and uncomplicated life (Hampton, 1986). The needs were easily satisfied by nature because there was abundance nature but small size of human population, which ensue no competition. They were sparsely populated then and had less reason for conflict or fear. Morality was naturally endowed with capacity for pity. There was no inclined to harm one another. But over time, uncertainty started. Overpopulation made the means by which human satisfy their needs changed. They start living close in small families, and consequently, communities. Introduction of divisions of labour at both within or between the families, discoveries, and inventions made life easier and gave rise to leisure time. Such leisure inevitably led to comparisons that result into public values, envy, pride, worry, and un-contented (Celeste, 2014).

Hampton (1986) the invention of private property pivotal their movement out of simple and pure state of nature to the one characterized by greed, competition, vanity, inequality, vices and their fall from the grace of the state of nature. Private property pronounced inequality and created stratifications or classes in society. Paradigm (government) that oversees property and prevented tampering was established through contract.

The normative contract argued by Rousseau in 1762 responsible for the sorry state of affairs and remedy for social and moral ills produced by development of modern society. Over the time, the true purpose of establishing government fossilizes inequalities and guarantees equality and protection of rights. The distinct between the justifications and factual of humankind was the utmost importance of social contract, which began with quotation of Rousseau that stated “man was born free but chains everywhere”.

In other words, human being is essentially free in the state of nature but civilization substitutes their subservience for freedom through dependence economy and social inequalities to the extent that they judge themselves based on comparisons. But since returning to the state of nature is neither feasible nor desirable, the purpose of political authority was to restore freedom and reconcile human living together. This was the fundamental philosophical issue that the theory was sought to address. That is, human being needs live together without conflict, fear or threat. Just like Hobbes and Locke, Rousseau said all men are made by nature to be equal; therefore, no one should govern others without agreement. The justified authority can only be allowed through agreements or covenants (Celeste, 2014). The sovereign is formed when the free and equal ones come together and agree to govern themselves effectively. This theory was basically on political morality and society. But the corrupt practices, self-interest, and greed are eroding the attributes.

3.2 Meaning/Definition of International Law

3.2.1 International Law

International law is the instructive body of law composed for greater parts of the principles and rules of conduct that state the bound to observe, and do commonly observe in the relation of individuals. It comprises:

- i. The rules of law relating the functions of international institutions or organizations with one another, states, and individuals.
- ii. Certain rules of law relating individuals and non-state entities as per the rights or duties of such individuals and non-state entities, which are the concerns of the international community.

The development of international law witnessed between 18th-19th centuries was a byproduct of growing interdependence of states invention that overcomes the difficulties of space, time, and intellectual communication.

International Law is also 'consisted body of laws, rules and legal principles that are based on custom, treaties, legislation and define, control, constrain or affect the rights and duties of the states in relations with one another'.

However, there has been no agreed definition of international law. But the role of international law and its tasks performed can be described. There is always being the thought that international law governed the relations between states and cannot affect the state's domestic arrangements due to the state's sovereignty. But nevertheless, this does not suggest that state can internally behave as it wished. The states are still in allegiance with the international law regime. Many of them are signatory to international conventions. International organizations such as United Nations, Labour Organization, and World Bank are promoters of human rights law obligations. They urge the states to conform to the international norms in their domestic affairs.

3.3 The History/Origin of Law of Nations and International Law

There are many assertions about the real origin of international law or how international law emerged or came into being. Some schools of thought are of the view that the modern system of international or law of nations is a product of four hundred years ago. It argues that even in the period of antiquity; the rules of conduct to regulate the relations between independent communities were formulated and obeyed. To corroborate this, treaties and immunities of ambassadors had being in existence for many centuries before the emergence of Christianity, most especially, in the places like ancient Egypt and India.

In the ancient Greek city states, there were small states but independent of one another, and showing evidence of embryonic. Although there were limited regionally form of international law, which one authority could be found. Professor Vinogradoff described it as an international law consisting of customary rules which crystalises into law from a long-standing usage that followed by the cities' rules against violability of heralds in battle, prior declaration of war, and enslavement of prisoners of war. The rules were applied not only in relations to inter se of the sovereign Greek cities, but as well as their neighbouring states.

According to *Midgley*, in the ancient Greece, the natural law conceptualisation of self-defence was used interchangeably with private vengeance in the expression of *amynes nomon* thus implying the legitimacy of the killing of an attacker where it is absolutely necessary for self-defence.

Hence, Grotius viewed and maintained that: If, for example, your life is imperiled in the wilderness as a result of an attack from some individuals, under circumstances of time and place that did not permit recourse to a judge, you will rightly defend yourself... for ...not even the ... law which forbids you to injure another, would be an obstacle to such righteous self-defence. *Apriori Gentili* insisted that self-defence was always everywhere and absolutely favoured, which is in accordance with law of nature providing protection. The public law was not sufficient then, or, too tardy. The natural law for self-defence surpasses every other consideration, even in the ancient Rome according to Gentili. While they were making law of war, they failed to consider it lawful to engage in battle on certain days, and there was no day preventing them from defending their safety or honour. The right for self-defence is against everybody and owes no respect to any patron.

In actual fact, it was believed that the conditions favourable for the emergence and growth of modern law of nations did not come into being until fifteenth century when a number of independent civilised states began to evolve in Europe. Before this period, the Europe was reported to have passed through various stages in which the either conditions were so chaotic to make impossible any order or rules of conduct between or among nations. The political circumstances were not necessarily a code for International Law. It could be said that at a time when the authority of Roman Empire extended its civilization all over the world, there was no independent states in essence, and therefore, the law of nations was not called for.

Two issues were identified as factors that militated against the evolution of modern system of the law of Nations. Namely: the temporal and spiritual unity of greater part of Europe under the Holy Roman Empire. although this could be seen as mere notional and feudal structure of Western Europe hinged on hierarchy of authority which was not only clogged the emergence of independent states but also prevented the powers of the time from acquiring unitary character and authority of modern sovereign states. The fifteenth and sixteenth centuries also witnessed a drastic changed position with the discovery of the New World. The renaissance of learning and reformation as a religious revolution disrupted the façade of political and spiritual unity of Europe and shook the foundations of medieval Christendom. The works of Bodin, a Frenchman; Machiavelli, an Italian; and later in the seventeenth century, Hobbes, an Englishman, led to evolvement of theories required to meet the new conditions.

The growth of numbers of independent states initiated in the early Greece and the process of formation of customary rules of international law from the usages and stages followed by states in the mutual relations gave birth to international law. Italy, with its multitude of small independent states maintains diplomatic relations with one another including other parts of the world; which thereby led to the development of numbers of customary rules relating with the diplomatic envoys; most especially, the rules relating to their appointments, receptions, and inviolability of diplomatic envoys.

The history or record revealed fifteenth and sixteenth centuries as when the jurists begun to consider the evolution of community of independent sovereign states, think and write about challenges or problems facing the law of nations and realised the necessity for some body of rules to regulate certain aspects of relations among the states. When there was no established customary rule, the jurists were obliged to devise and fashion out working principles of Roman law and become the subject of revived study in Europe. They had recourse to the precedents of ancient history, theology, canon law, and semi-theological concept of “law of nature” – a concept that influenced the development of international law. The international law was further expanded in nineteenth century due to numbers of factors that better fall within the scope of historical studies.

For example, the emergence of powerful new states both within and outside the Europe, the spread of European civilisation overseas, the technological advancement of world transport, the greater destructive nature or tendency of modern warfare, and the influence of new inventions recorded. All these factors necessitated the urgent coming together of the international society and states to acquire a system of rules that regulate activities in conduct of international affairs. The century therefore experienced a remarkable development in the law of war and neutrality, and greatly increases in adjudications by International Arbitral Tribunals following the Alaba Claims Awards of 1872 that provided an important new source of rules and principles.

The state later commenced the habit of negotiating general treaties in order to regulate affairs of mutual concerns. This contributed to further development of international law by concentrating on the existing practice and discard the concept of “law of nature”, although, the law of nature did not abandoned the recourse to the reason and justice where there was absence of custom or treaty rule. They were called upon to speculate on what should be the law.

Other developments include the establishment of Permanent Court of Arbitration by the Hague conferences of 1899 and 1907, while the Permanent Court of International Justice was set up in 1927 as an authoritative international judicial tribunal.

After several attempts of codifying international law, the work of the Resolution of Assembly of League of Nations of 22 September 1924 led to the International Law Commission establishment. Thereafter, the United Nations adopted the concepts of the League of Nations' resolution in its Article 13, Paragraph 1 of the Charter of the United Nations; which states "the General Assembly shall initiate studies and make recommendations for the purpose of: (a) ... encouraging progressive development of international law and its codification". The commission shall consist of 34 members elected by the General Assembly. The members shall act as individuals and not as officials representing their respective states. The International Law Commission was later established by the United Nation General Assembly in 1947 for the "promotion of the progressive development of international law and its codification". It holds an annual session at the United Nations Office in Geneva.

3.3.1 Members of Commission

Article 2, paragraph 1, of the Commission statute provides that the members of the Commission "shall be persons of recognised competence in international law". The members of the Commission are persons who possess recognised competence and qualifications in both doctrinal and practical aspects of international law. Member are drawn from the various segments of the international legal community, such as academia, the diplomatic corps, governmental ministries and international organisations, 2. Since the members are often persons working in the academic and diplomatic fields with outside professional responsibilities, the commission should able to proceed with its work not in an ivory tower but in close touch with the realities of international life. No two members of the Commission may be nationals of the same state (article 2, paragraph 2) (6)). In case of dual nationality, a person must deemed to be a national of the state which he/she ordinarily exercises civil and political rights (article 2, paragraph 3).

Achievements of the Commission

The International Law Commission's work led to the creation of a number of treaties and other works of international law that are kin to the present international legal order. The examples of the achievements made so far are thus:

- Vienna Convention on the Law of Treaties.
- Vienna Convention of Succession of States in respect to the Treaties.

- Vienna Convention on Diplomatic Relations.
- Draft Articles on the Responsibility of States for International Criminal Court, which was first proposed in 1949 at the request of the United Nations General Assembly.

3.3.2 The Sources of International Law

The two major sources of international law creating legally binding rules of international law are Treaty and Custom. Although there is no agreed statement on what should constitute a source of international law, the above mentioned sources and other sources were considered or discussed briefly.

International Treaties

Treaty is the first major contemporary source of international law. The treaties may be bilateral (between two states) or multilateral (where there are two or more states). Generally speaking, the treaties are binding only on the parties to any particular treaty and the nature of the obligation would be defined within the treaty. The word 'treaty' covers multitude of international agreements and contracts among the states, as well as those describing themselves as treaties. Their terms may include conventions, pacts, declarations, charters, protocols, and covenants. The nature of international law's binding treaties are derived from *pacta sunt servanda* principle, which can be translated as 'promises must be kept', or more precisely with the regard to treaties. In other words, 'every treaty is binding on the parties to the agreement, and must be performed by the parties in good faith'. For further understanding of the generic term 'treaty' Article 53, 64, 20, 38, 2(1) should be consulted.

Customary International Law

It is not easy to understand the concept of international customary law. But Article 38 states that two elements are required. (1.) the custom itself, which evidences in general practice is accepted as law. (2.) the commonly entitled (*opinio juris sive necessitates*), which opinions as law or necessity that means where a state complies with the custom in the belief that it is legally required to do so as evidence. The concept of customary international law originated from the period when international law was overwhelmingly the law of nations.

In nineteenth century, the international law was very much more concerned with describing of the actual conduct of the states in relationships with others. Rather than, prescribing, which encompasses what the nations in fact did than what they ought to do, or ought to have done.

Other Sources of International Law

Other sources are:

- general principles of law recognised by civilised nations; and
- judicial decisions and teachings of the most highly qualified publicists of the various nations’.

(A) The ‘general principles of law’ refers to the legal principles, which exist in almost all-domestic legal systems. The principles are applied if their existence can be proven. Wherever neither treaty nor customary international law seems applicable to a particular event, the international law as well may not be applicable. This is because the international law is not totally comprehensive. It has no already international law for every unique event.

Examples of the principles used in international law include:

- recognition of the principle or violation of an obligation leading to injury or damage.
- the right of parties to a dispute must have fair hearing before the judgment.
- the concept of limited liability.

The general principles also include the principles of equity in the sense of legal fairness rather than refined the area of law of a particular state. That was why, Dixon opines that even if the ‘principles’ did not qualify as binding law, it should be cleared that it has profound impact on the development of international law, either as furnishing the reason why specific norms should be adopted, or serve as catalyst for the state practices that lead to the creation of customary and treaty law.

- (B) The second subsidiary source is judicial decision and teaching of the most highly qualified publicists of the various nations. Its debates mean the intense, which was stated in Article 38 that determined the rules of law.
- (C) The first point to understand here is that international law makes no use of common law system of *stare decisis*. There is no court binding decisions. This was explicitly stated in the statute of the International Court of Justice that its decisions have no binding quality beyond the parties to a particular case. The international law judicial decisions and the writings of highly qualified publicist are used as common law system decisions from different jurisdictions and the writings of legal academics are used. That is, there may be more or less persuasive but not because of the logic in the reasoning and argument.
- (D) There are some resources recognised as potential sources of international law which do not appear in the Article 38. The most important of these are the Resolutions of International Organizations that carry its own weight in addition to the evidence of the state practice.

3.4 Criticisms of International Law

3.4.1 Recognition of International Law

There abounds claims and counter-claims by the international lawyers, scholars and politicians on whether international law is really a law, or, what distinguishes the international law from international relations and confines it within the definition of law. Many international lawyers claimed that it is a 'distinctive mode discourse'. The legal ways of discussing the international issues is distinctive because of the rules, procedure, and process; which brings to bear some questions.

Indeed, the formulation of the questions in argument is affected by the input of international law – knowledge. However, every state does accept the existence of international law as something distinct from the ordinary international intercourse. The acceptance of the reality of international law by some states is important to those who suggest that international law is not really law. The fact that laws are broken and the breakers are often escaped punishment affirms the marginal importance of the existence of law. Much more significant is that most citizens are actually internalised values of criminal law when they do not agree with the law. The local law violators/breakers rarely attempt to deny the existence and authenticity of the law, rather, they try to justify their transgression. The same or similar argument or defence is actually put up by state(s) to justify any act or action that against the international law.

With the trend of global events in the face of multifarious manifestations, in-effectiveness of the law dealing with the enforcement problems need to be addressed. For example, when the United States invaded Grenada in 1983, it was belatedly, and the little half-heartedly attempted to justify the invasion legally. The fact that 'justification' withstood little scrutiny is less important for our argument than the fact that the United States felt bound to make it. Similarly, when the multi-dinors combat aircraft belonging to a particular state successfully carry out an aerial raid on the cities of another state as United States bombers did to Libya cities of Tripoli and Benghazi on April 15, 1986. The very much this was true the U.S. invasion of Panama to capture General Noriega and when Saddam Hussein ordered the invasion of Kuwait in 1990. He did not announce that he intended to flout, or worse still, ignore international law. Rather he attempted, perhaps not terribly convinced, to defend his actions as being consistent with international law. He did not only suggest that the invasion was a legitimate self-defence, but also referred to Kuwait. The claim by China that both Tibet and Taiwan are integral components of Chinese territory is couched in terms calculated to appeal to international law.

The more recent intervention of NATO in the domestic affairs of the former Republic of Yugoslavia was defended as being consistent with international law; while Israel in collaboration with the United States argued that Israel's activities in Palestine are not necessarily a breach. Most recently of this has been the bitter legal debate concerning the intervention of the U.S led 'coalition' in Iraq. The quite remarkably the debate over the legality of the intervention has been absolutely central to debates over intervention itself. How can the attacked states and its victims have redress? Is the question among the other persistently raising doubts in the minds of teachers of international law and observers of international affairs? The international lawyers and politicians are concerns about the efficacy of the tenets of international law.

Brierly, an eminent U.K authority on international law writes in 1944, and states thus:

The best evidence for the existence of international law is that every actual state recognises that it does exist and that it is itself under obligation to observe it. States may often violate international law, just as individuals often violate municipal law, but no more than individuals do states defend their violations by claiming that they are above the law.

Reference to this point, the directive of international law was derived in parts from its sources and origin. International law and laws essentially came into existence either through treaties which is obviously required the consent of those who are to be bound, or, through customs; but not always custom that has been long established. This is because not all custom is held to be international law, but only who had been regarded by states as legally binding custom. Thus customs become international law only when the states observing the customs do so in the belief that the customs are indeed parts of international law. The fact still remains that there is no law creating by legislature really, but only reflects the reality of sovereignty. According to Shabtai Rosenne (1984), 'international law is a law of co-ordination, not, as in the case of most internal law, a law of subordination. By law of coordination one means to say that it is created and applied by its own subjects, primarily the independent state either directly or indirectly, for their own common purposes'. A particular theory states that international law is nothing but a code of rules of conduct of moral force only.

Austin, a positivist, states in his theory that law should relate to commands issuing from a determinate sovereign authority. Thus, if the rules concerned do not emanate from a sovereign authority, which is politically superior, or if there are no sovereign authority, then the rules could not be legal rules, but rules of moral or ethical valid only. If international law is critically examined, it would be seen that there is no visible authority with legislative powers or indeed with any determinate power over the society of the states. He then concluded that international law is nothing but 'positive international morality' only analogous to the rules binding a club or society or 'opinions or sentiments current among nations generally'. Without doubt, international law cannot be compared favourably with the rules of municipal law which effortlessly apply within each state.

In spite of the apparent merits of municipal law which actually out-number those of international law, modern day developments demonstrate that international law is law per-excellence. Some schools of thought are of the wrong view that in the absence of supra-national system of sanctions capable of being enforced against law breakers, states have little incentive to obey international law. The truth is that only violations of international law are reported or complained about the obedience to it, which is commonly taken for granted. In view of the above statement, laymen rarely know or consider that people who obtain international passports and visas before traveling abroad, are for instance obeying international law, while the immunity being enjoyed by the foreign nationals, diplomats (ambassadors) and the sovereignty of a foreign embassy in the country or state of domicile is also in conformity with the dictates of international law.

On the other hand, because the international law is breached or violated from time to time, does not mean, all the rules of the law will always be broken without sanctions underpin them. Furthermore, the legal way of dealing with international law issues is a distinct way. That is, the legal discourse is distinguishable from the language of international relations. It can be argued that what distinguishes most clearly the legal way from the social way of resolving disputes in domestic/municipal terms is that law always requires a translation of social facts into legal facts. This is the truth of the international law. The argument still suggests that translation is both the law greatest strength and paradoxically it's greatest weakness. It is seen as strength in the sense that when a dispute is put in legal terms with legal issues, it becomes legally resolvable that there will be (almost invariably) a legal solution to be legal problem. It may also be a weakness because of the resolution.

While it will resolve the legal issues, it may not resolve the social (untranslated) problem. The law way of resolving disputes works 'best' when all the parties to the dispute accept the legislation of the dispute.

Very much the same applies to the international law, which is a central factor in explaining the reasons why only a minority state accepts the compulsory jurisdiction of the International Court of Justice. There is little point in having a dispute legally resolved if underlying political problems remain. Unless the parties to the dispute, together with the constituencies they represent, accept that the legal outcome resolves the problem. The resolution itself may in fact simply lead to further disputes. In addition, the existence of international disputes does not always mean or suggest that there is breakdown of international law as international disputes are caused by multifarious factors. Though there may be genuine uncertainty about the international law, which is exemplified by the Gulf War or the incessant Israel/Palestine War.

Therefore, in the case of Gulf War, Iraq believed that it was proper to lay claim to her historical title of Kuwait territory. Kuwait was part of Iraq before the onset of the colonisation of their geographical location. While the multinational forces (Allied Forces) of the United Nations thought that Iraqi invasion and annexation of Kuwait principally violated Article 2(4) of the United Nations, which provides thus: the member of states are to refrain from the threat or use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any state or any other manner inconsistent with the purposes of the United Nations. Akehurst in his summation on this, states that, the problem of the enforcement of sanctions is somewhat intractable under the international law because of the peculiar characteristics of the latter. It was in contradistinction to the municipal law.

Under international law, there is no legislative authority; neither is there provisions for obligatory judicial settlement, there is absence, equally, of any centralised executive authority to enforce judgment. It should be made known, however, that the recent occurrence or developments have created a great mass of 'international legislation' through series of international conferences, law-making treaties, and conventions. Although there is no determinate sovereign legislative authority in the international field, the procedure for formulating these rules of 'internal legislation' by means of international conferences or through existing international organs is settled.

For example, the Charter creating the U.N. drawn up in San Francisco in 1945 is based on the legality of international law. Article 38 of the U.N. Charter gives the International Court of Justice (ICT) the power to “decide in accordance with the international law such disputes as submitted to it”.

Article 51 of the U.N. under the remedy for self help also authorises the use of self-defence against armed attacks. For example, during the Gulf war in 1991, the unprovoked Iraqi missile attack against Israel could validly attack the Israeli response in self-defence against Iraq if Israel had wanted to be involved in the war immediately. The Iraqi attack on Israel could be said to have had both political and strategic undertone such that Iraqi leader (Late Saddam Hussein) would have assumed that if Israel could be brought/lured into the war, against her, many Arab states if not all would/might rise against Israel in support of Iraq. The total condemnation of the Iraqi action by United States of America and her allies coupled with the rapid deployment of American made “Patriot missile” to destroy or neutralise the potency of Iraqi “said missile” really saved the war from degenerating into something else. Nevertheless, habit, conscience, morality, affection and tolerance are the ingredients necessitating or responsible for much obedience of international law in the committee of nations. Specifically, certain factors make states obey international law. For instance, treaties create laws unto themselves, since *Pacta Sunt Servanda* (agreement must be kept). It is not in the interest of states to break the law so created because international law facilitates international co-operation.

The U. N Resolution 678 of 1990

The United Nations acting under Chapter vii of its Charter which provides that in the event of any threat to the peace, breach of the peace, or act of aggression, the U.N. may institute enforcement action against a particular state to maintain or restore international peace and security and to the extent that the state concerned is in breach of international law.

On the 29th of November, 1990, the U.N. passed Resolution 678 which recalled and re-affirmed resolution 600-667 and states that: *Nothing that despise all efforts by the United Nations, Iraq refuses to comply with its obligation to implement resolution 660 (1990) and the above subsequent relevant resolutions in flagrant contempt of the council, mindful of its duties and responsibilities under the Charter of the United Nations for the maintenance and preservation of international peace and security, and determined to secure full compliance with its decisions.*

The United Nations...

1. Demands that Iraq to comply fully with resolution 660 (1990) and all subsequent relevant resolutions and decide, while maintaining all its decisions to allow Iraq one final opportunity as a pause of goodwill to do so;
2. Authorises member-states cooperating with the Government of Kuwait, unless Iraq on or before 15th January 1991 fully implements as set forth in paragraph 1 above, the foregoing resolutions to use all necessary means to uphold and implement security council resolution 660 (1990) and all subsequent relevant resolutions and to restore international peace and security in the area;
3. Requests all states to provide appropriate support for the actions undertaken in pursuant of paragraph 2 of this resolution.
4. Requests the states concerned to keep the council regularly informed on the progress of actions undertaken pursuant to paragraphs 2 and 3 of this resolution.
5. Decides to remain seized on the matter.

However, international law was also criticised for the lack of sanctions it was able to apply in the event of non-compliance or breach of obligation against some powerful states while reverse is the case whenever a developing state contravenes the international law, which is corroborating the saying that all animals are equal, but some are more equal than others.

4.0 CONCLUSION

Despite all the arguments put up above, it could therefore be asserted that despite the academic, international lawyers and politicians' debates or arguments, the international law still remains a law. It has been playing vital role in the elimination and prevention of problems of international dimension and promotes international mutual benefits and peaceful co-existence. It is a way of regulating international relations among the nations, which is distinctively legal. The general principles of law lies in the ability to identify inadequacies of both custom and treaty in international law, and the problems associated with seeking of identifying international law.

5.0 SUMMARY

This unit considered the meaning/definition international law, origin of stat/international law and the sources of international law. It was established that there is no singular or particular definition of international law.

Different sources and origin of international law facilitate proper understanding of the concept. Criticisms or debates of international law were examined. It sees international law as a way of regulating the relationships among nations within the preview of legal interpretation. The non-application or lack of sanction for non-compliance or breach with references to some developed nations is eroding or destroying the legal quality of the international law.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Can international law be regarded as law or not? Discuss.
2. What distinguishes international law from international relations?
- 3a. Define international law
4. Compare and contrast the relationship between domestic law and international law.
5. Why are some states sanctioned and others left untouched for non-compliance or breach of international law?
6. International conventions or treaties are the only way states can consciously create international law'. Justify the statement.
7. Identify and discuss the problems inherent in the concept of customary international law.
8. State and discuss the nature and quality of sources of international law aside custom and treaty.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- American Journal of International Law, 41 (1947)<http://www.icrc.org/>
- Cassese, Chapter 1: 'The main feature of International Community', pp.3–17.
- Dixon, Chapter 1: 'The nature of International Law and the International System', pp. 1 – 20.
- International Law Commission [:/www.un.org/law/ilc/intro.htm](http://www.un.org/law/ilc/intro.htm)
- Kaczorowska, Chapter 1: 'History and Nature of International Law', pp. 1–11.
- Cassese, Chapter 8: 'International Law-Creation Custom', pp. 153 – 69; 170 – 82.
- Dixon, Chapter 2: 'The Sources of International Law' pp. 21 – 48.
- Kaczorowska, Chapter 2: 'Sources of Multinational Law', pp. 12 – 36.
- Online Journal of International Law,
<http://internationallawdomain.blogspot.com/>

- United Nations General Assembly Resolution A-RES-174(II), <http://www.undemocracy.com/> A-RES-174 on 21 November 1947.
- Dixon, Chapter 1: 'The nature of International Law and the International System', pp. 1 – 20.
- American Journal of International Law, 41 (1947)<http://www.icrc.org/> International Law Commission
<http://www.un.org/law/ilc/introfra.htm>
- Online Journal of International Law,
<http://internationallawdomain.blogspot.com/>
- E. B. F. Midgley (1975). *The National Law Tradition and the Theory of International Relations*. London, Elek Books Limited.
- Frank Pizetacnik, (1993) "The Right of Self-Defence as an Exception to the Prohibition of War", 5SL. JIL, 125.
- Roy Emerson, Curtis (1914). "The Law of Hostile Military Expeditions As Applied by the United States", 8 AJIL, 236.
- Cassese, Chapter 3: 'The Fundamental Principles Governing International Relationships', pp. 48 – 55.

UNIT 2 CONCEPTUALISATION OF SECURITY

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Meaning/Definition of Security
 - 3.2 Conventional Uniform/Traditional Security System
 - 3.3 Social/Human Security System
 - 3.4 The Importance of Security
 - 3.5 The Challenges of Security
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

There is no doubt security encompasses the protection of human rights and provision for basic human needs, which are appropriate approaches for social transformation. It ensures stableness and orderliness of both animates and inanimate in their natural environment or artificial context. That is, security provides an enabling environment or atmosphere for good socio-political orderliness in social system. In other words, security and its attributes are the focus of this unit. The unit will enable the students to have understanding on why people should be conscious of security and of which importance is the security to human development.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, students would be able to:

- define or explain security and its attributes
- differentiate between traditional/conventional uniform and social/human security .
- state the importance of security

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Meaning/Definitions of Security

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), security is defined as measure ensuring peaceful co-existence and development at large. It guarantees absence of fears, threats, anxieties, tensions, and apprehensions of losing life, liberty, property, goals, values, etc. It is essential to sustainable progress and development.

It is a pre-condition for people's improvement, particularly, the poor. Its conceptualisation and contextualisation have recently beyond a fundamental military activity that aims at protecting territory and sovereignty. Lipmann (1943:51) a nation is secured to the extent that it is not in a position of losing core values, lives, properties, liberties, and when it wishes to deter aggression or win war. Meaning, security provides an enabling environment or atmosphere for good socio-political orderliness in social system.

Indeed, it is very important to lives, service renderings, and crucial or critical to human relationship. It serves as protective measure, medium, substance and shield or 'insulator' to life from dangers. No nations or reasonable society takes security for granted or carelessly. Security is highly sensitive to every social formation. It is a condition for freedom. Its classifications reveal that it cannot be stereotyped or based on military activities only. It encompasses components of human well being. It can be classified into traditional security (institutionalised security operative) and human/social security, which could be subdivided into political security, domestic security, economic security, industrial security or workplace security, human security, national security, regional security, etc. There has been much more emphasis on traditional security (institutionalised security operative) than human/social security. All these are crucial to the peaceful co-existence of every social element. Insecurity situation includes communication gap, hunger, poverty, disease, natural disasters, threats of war or war, genocide, terrorism and any other forms of violent acts (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2021).

However, having the broad knowledge of security concept is quite different from its usual culture and practices. Security is more of consciousness than acquirement of its knowledge solemnly. Its consciousness is not just awareness of its threats, but taking the cognisance of necessary measures at right time, such as alertness, vigilance, rational steps, and actions that guarantee absence of threats or fears of insecurity, absence of external or internal aggressions. Its consciousness and culture pre-supposed the emphasis on its knowledge or awareness (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020). Security consciousness gives room for better security reflexes, alertness, and agility of a person. The security conscious person is highly sensitive and more curious or cautious of security situation. Its consciousness is a strategic thinking exercise that provides necessary information for planning or organisation (Aja, 1999:35). It is crucial and should be professionally undertaken. The public needs to be sensitised, enlightened, or educated about security alertness, vigilance, agility, and awareness.

It encourages sensitivity and responsibility of maintaining and ensuring absence of threats. Security education helps or serves as a mechanism of correcting erroneous feeling that sees security as an exclusive responsibility and right of the state. In its actual sense, security is the responsibility of every social member and component. Its orientation is better achieved through public seminars or conferences where the audience would be opined to both institutionalised security operatives and human/social security concept. Security operative outfits include military, intelligence outfits, police force, defence council, etc. They are institutions responsible for socio-political and economy protection, cultural orderliness, and stableness in social formations. Fundamental security needs include ideas and wills of ensuring absence of insecurity (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020). The two types of security concepts are Conventional Institutionalised Uniform Operative/Traditional Security System and Social/Human Security System

3.2 Conventional Institutionalised Uniform Operative/Traditional Security System

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), the traditional security has been the focused (institutionalised security operative) of many societies, because, it involves the state's defence in ensuring social order - either by military prowess or any other uniform security apparatus activities. But since issue of security management is beyond fundamental military protection of territory and sovereignty of society or country, the concept of security system is therefore included the responsibility that ensures well being of people. In other words, various institutionalised security practices are political, domestic, economic, industrial or work place, etc. which can be subdivided further the following:

- 1. Political Security:** The political security of society, state or nation includes peacebuilding mechanism and good governance that serve as preventive measures. It could be divided into regional, national, state, regime, community, etc. security. Political security encompasses different measures that help in achieving social stableness, orderliness, and smooth running of governance and society.
- 2. Regional and International Security:** This security mechanism takes cognisance of international community safety into consideration in order to protect, prevent, or arrest dysfunctional threats or aggression situations. It could be through human or usual institutionalised security operative. Examples are regional security agent like ECOWAS Ceasefire Monitoring Group, United Nations Peacekeepers, African Union Peacekeepers, European Union Peacekeepers, World Health Organisation, etc. activities. This also encompasses human security provisions for the member states.

3. National Security: National security is the ability of a nation to ensure or pursue its interest internally, or, among the committee of nations. In other words, a nation is said to be secured to the extent that it does not sacrifice its core values for other countries' wishes, or be at the danger of losing its rights to other nations. Or is able, if challenged, to maintain its sovereignty and protect its territory internally and externally, even in a war situation". It should also able to take cognisance of human security provisions for its citizens seriously. A nation is security conscious, when its citizens, group of individuals, political parties, military and para-military bodies are oriented to serve without selfish interest of individuals. The military phase of national security consciousness defends territorial sovereignty and independence of nation against any threats, subversions, or aggressions either in the air, land, or sea. A national security is attainable, when its social system is free of fears, threats, aggression, or subversions from within or outside.

4. State Security: The issue of state's security arose as a result of different system of governments across the globe. Under the federal system of government, the state has both residual and concurrent list of powers to provide security for its territory. Its security consciousness protects territory against any attempts of threat or aggressions. State security system ensures social harmony and maintains social order at large. At times, it has its own security system and network corroborating with the national security efforts. It guarantees basic necessity of life for its people, which is provision for human/social security.

5. Community Security: Since security could not be solely exclusive right and duty of the state or nation, thereby, warrants or makes communities to provide proper ways of ensuring socio-political and cultural environment stableness or order for themselves. Community security apparatus includes community police and vigilantes. They safeguard against external or internal aggressions, either from armed robbers, hire assassins, terrorist, rapist, etc., and likewise, protect their territories.

6. Regime Security: This is a political regime protection, which could be democratic, oligarchy, military or monarchical regime. It is structured or established to provide protection for certain ruling power or class. Such practices still exist in Burundi and Rwanda, most especially, between Tutsi and Hutus; and Liberia between indigenous Africans and Americo-Liberians before 21st century. It is all about ethnic cleavage and sentiment. Disposition of a regime would be less tolerable to other ethnic groups. There would be less interplay of total toleration and cooperation.

Their electoral process is structured or manipulated to retain and support regime in power. The regime organs or policies are structured to serve and protect political/economic interest of dominant groups. There is less concerned for national interests. Regime security involves in personal protection, which is synonymous with a dictators' regime. Their security is oriented towards intimidation of subjects, opponents, or subordinates. There is no room for opposition. Security apparatus serves as national guards and snipers to the regime. They engage in covert action.

7. Domestic Security: This has to do with protection of household's lives and properties against any aggressions either from the neighbourhood attacks, armed robbery attacks, fire disasters or any other unprecedented attacks. It protects household from rapist and any forms of violence. It guarantees basic necessity of life for the household members.

8. Economic Security: This is to safeguard economic performances of a society or nation in order to avoid poverty exacerbation or compounding development challenges. Economic security ensures protection of society against attempts of internal or external economy sabotage that includes 419-sams, armed robbery attack, bankrupt, money laundering, and other related economic corrupt practices. Economic insecurity results into inflations, devaluation of currencies and metamorphoses into collapse of economy system at large.

9. Industrial or Work Place Security: This encompasses measures or precautions that needed to be taken in workplace by the workers against insecurity of life, accident, or threats of aggressions in order to safeguard or ensure workers safety and their company. It includes personal safeguards, fire disaster management, prevention of property vandalisation, hostage taken, health safety, environmental protection, water, food security, etc.

3.3 Social/Human Security System

Human/social security is a condition for freedom, peace, safety, and protection of human rights, access to resources, basic necessities of life, health, and well being. It encompasses protection of lives and properties, pre-condition for people's improvement, protection of human rights and provision for basic human needs.

But since security issue is multi-facial in nature, the human/social security concept manifests itself in various forms, which is the focus of this section. Just as an adage says healthy sustainable growth is the policy of supporting productivity, employment, and resources development. Human/social security emphasises or gathers the needed principles of human security measures. The protection of individual welfare is keen to the sustainable peace and development within a social system (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Once the security of individuals is threatened by the state internal or external mechanisms, their social stability and order would be threatened or overridden. Addressing the root cause of humanitarian crises (e.g. economic, political, or social instability) is an effective way of managing social problems and protects individuals from long-term insecurity situation. That is, preventing social disorder is the best solution to insecurity. A collective understanding of deeper social issues is very crucial to the prevention of humanitarian crises. Human security is useful in preventing social crises. It is a paradigm of identifying, prioritizing, and managing trans-national insecurity. Successful examples of human security approach can be found in conflict intervention and humanitarian programmes of international community. The arms control is another important priority of human security provisions, which are closely link with freedom from fears and threats.

In contrast, traditional security focuses on protection of state through security apparatus operatives. But human/social security criticises the use of force and landmine as viable weapons of war, because, it encourages massive collateral damage of life and property. State is always ironically justified the negative impacts of mines by placing emphasis on the right to use violence, which is unacceptable to human security advocates. Human security approach removes deficiencies in traditional security, state counter terrorism approach and total use of force. The traditional security system uses sanctions and military approaches against opposition, which are usually directed against nation and not on specific target or individual. Besides general causalities and unnecessary displacement of person, it fuels the thought of socio-political unrest, fears, threats, and socio-economic distortions. Hence, the following human/social security concepts are discussed below:

1. Personal security: The overall of human security component asserts that traditional security measures exacerbate social problems. It therefore advocates that the states should use humanitarian approaches in addressing enduring social problems, which guarantee personal security. The interventions on security threats should specifically acknowledge the culture of people and their historiography. That is, while traditional security intervention uses times to address issues through force, exclusionary practices use influential approach to achieve human security. Concessions of personal security include rebuilding of social infrastructure, economic investment, provision for trauma reliefs and active reconciliation. It involves participation of diverse groups of actors including policy-makers, private enterprises, public service providers, and social entrepreneurs. It requires active listening, symmetric dialogue, and accommodation of alternative discussion.

Personal security system emphasises protection of human rights and respect for the rule of law. In many countries, counter-terrorist measures violate human rights. Its abuses including detention without judicial review, torture and extradition within or among countries. It restrains citizens' rights to freedom and breaches the principle of non-discrimination. Its violations arguably exacerbate the threats of terrorism. The failure to respect human rights undermines international effort in cooperating to combat terrorism. Efforts should be made to effectively include human rights protection. There is need to address physical, psychological and political dimensions of insecurity. The forum for protection of people from all forms of threats and violence should be guaranteed. Personal security protects individuals and state from violent acts, domestic violence and being a predatorily incursion. Human security is the process where individual's life and property are maximally protected from attacks or threats of attack. Sometimes, it could manifest itself as refugee camp or safe haven, for those who are displaced by wars. The provisions for food, adequate water, medicine, shelter, etc. are subjects of concerns. There is always need for maximum personal security.

2. Community Security: This protects people and their cultural heritages from losses, in terms of life and property protection from destruction, threats, attacks, or invasions. For example, the United Nations declares 1993 as year of indigenous people, where the vulnerability of 300 million aborigines in 70 countries was highlighted on how they face different wider spiral of violence. It emphasises security and protection of people and their communities from internal and external aggressions.

3. Economic Security: This guarantees security of economy activities, networking, and flourishing within a social system, in terms of productivity and remuneration that serve as end results of public economic activities and safety. Economic insecurity constitutes serious threat to the development and progress of nations, as well as entrenching unemployment situations that brew political tensions and different agitations in society.

4. Political Security: This security encompasses good governance that ensures basic human needs and rights. Political repression, systematic torture, ill-treatment, or disappearance of persons, arms struggle of the state's actors and non state's actors are inimical to this security. The human rights violations are common political unrest coupled with individuals and groups repression. The political security overcomes negative social interactions that constitute insecurity situation into a state or nation.

5. Health Security: The health security encompasses good conditions of living that guarantee maximum protection of people from diseases and unhealthy lifestyles.

The threats to health security are infectious virus and parasitic diseases that kill and threaten the well being of people. For example, circulatory system diseases kill easily in many developed nations due to heavy industrial activities ejected from different pollutants into air and some kinds of food they eat. In some nations, threats to health or life are greater in the rural than urban areas, particularly, on the vulnerable groups due to lack of proper cares. The adults die young due to effects of malnutrition and insufficient or inadequate supply of medicine, clean water, etc.

6. Food Security: This includes access to basic food needs and supplements by people through better governmental policy. According to United Nations, overall availability of food for populace has become a greater consequence of social problem. The main problems are poor distribution of food, nutritional system, and poor purchasing power. In other words, human beings need to deal with the issue of food insecurity at both the national and global levels. The food security guarantees food and other means of livelihood for people.

7. Environmental Security: This has to do with protection of people's environment from any ravaging of natural disasters or man-made threats. Poor access to clean water resources, air pollution, global warming, and emission of the green house gas effects have greater environmental threats for human survival. Environmental degradation and extreme negative climate effects as well are having negative impacts on human security by prone human life into natural disasters that constitute decrease in resources. As the climate changes into harsh weather, the needs of human being increased due to reduction in natural resources.

Meaning, there would be fall short in food/water production and supply if environment is well managed. For example, water and energy are essential natural resources that provide basic human needs worldwide. Alteration of available resources increases food shortages that result into disputes, ethnic tensions, and civil unrests all the times. Vulnerability of human being to climate change induces non-climate factors like diseases, HIV/AIDs virus, poverty, unequal access to resources and economy. For example, the recent global warming effect was so intense on Niger Republic and Darfur of Southern Sudan to the extent that scarcity of food resources was everywhere and degenerated into large social crises. Climate change brings Saharan and Sub-Saharan desert into droughts of basic necessity and food production. There is less arable farming for the people to cultivate. Environmental threats transpose into insecurity. That is, environmental security that guarantees better living conditions, healthy life of the citizens and their environs are needed in societies.

3.4 The Importance of Security

Since security is an essential component of peace and sustainable development, international community or any conflict prone states need to intensify efforts in improving their security system across the land. Developmental co-operation that aims at supporting or creating conditions for dynamic and true representation that are capable of ensuring peaceful co-existence should be encouraged. Poor functioning security system that creates or destroys prospects of peace and socio-economic progress must be prevented or tackled. Hence, the factors that ensure security and sustainable peace such as developmental programme, political sovereignty, national unity, protection of lives and properties, co-operation among citizens, territorial safety, economic recovery and reconstruction, mobilisation and reintegration of security agencies, public safety, rule of law, confidence building in security forces, security education, conducive political landscape, state and national co-operation are the focus of this section (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

1. Developmental programme: Since conceptualisation of security system is gradually shifting away from solely military activities of protecting a territory and sovereignty to total responsible of the state to caring for the citizens, issue of developmental programme cannot be over-emphasised. This is because better living condition gives rise to good socio-political, economic and cultural attainment that ensure development at large. Security of a reasonable community or society encompasses conditions that ensure peaceful co-existence and safety of its community members. It helps to achieve better governing system, protection of human rights, access to resources, access to healthy environment and other basic necessities of life that guarantee development at large.

2. Political Sovereignty: This encompasses expression and exercising of power limitation among the nations in order to safeguard their national integrity and interests from any external encroachments through political, economic, or socio-cultural diplomacy or ability. It encourages the nations to exercise their power base on international community or United Nations Conventions. Committees of nations are expected to use their security prowess to protect their national and international interests across the world. But some powerful nations use their security prowess to suppress the less privilege nations because of their national interests. Meanwhile, every sovereign state has equal rights to protect its territorial integrity and sovereignty. But some nations violate the rights of other nations in the name of security prowess. Hence, for the peace and mutual benefit of every nation across the world, the rights of all nations must not be trampled upon by any nations. There should be justice, fairness, and equity in their interplays.

3. **National Unity:** The state of a national security determines its unity. Hence, its security issue should not be exclusive right of the state or national's security apparatus. It should encompass sum total efforts of all the citizens. In an attempt to attain this, all citizens need to work together as a body in order to achieve their needed national unity and self consciousness. Populace should see themselves as one body and encourage their common national security consciousness and protection of lives and properties that foster national unity.
4. **Protection of Lives and Properties:** The protection of lives and properties are peculiar and paramount to every human need, and not negotiable. Every member of society should be concerned and conscious of their security and safety in order to safeguard lives and properties. Security helps to achieve peaceful co-existence of people or components. It serves as a preventive measure for social vices attempt. It ensures needed stableness and orderliness in the societies. It builds short and long-term peace/stableness among the social elements.
5. **Co-operation among Citizens:** Security consciousness helps to build co-operation as well as better social structures among the social strata. Security is a teamwork that guarantees co-cooperativeness among the social elements and brings about better relational structure. In other words, a well-structured society is absolutely stayed clear of confusion among the social elements and environment.
6. **Territorial Safety:** A good territorial security network or system helps to ensure territorial protection against external or internal threats or attacks and aggressions. It ensures political, economic, and socio-cultural development of a nation or society through monitoring of outgoing or incoming of people and goods. It safeguards against terrorist acts or attacks. It guarantees and protects economic vibrancies of nations from dysfunctional social practices through territorial safety.
7. **Economic Recovery and Reconstruction:** Security issue is very crucial and ensures proper needed economic recovery and reconstruction. It stabilizes economic system and activities of a nation. In other words, while economic system aspiring to be buoyant requires better security system, insecurity situation causes depression and bankruptcy. Good security network is a stronghold of successive economy system that guides against bankruptcy. Maximum security system is required for economic vibrancy. It is in lieu of this that central bank of all nations take sole responsibility of economy security and protection of currency value.
8. **Mobilisation and Reintegration of Security Agencies:** Security apparatus of society needs to be reinforced and reintegrated at all times, in such that, it would guarantee confidence, maximum courage, and safety of people.

In other words, security agents require training, retraining and re-orientation at all time, as well as guarding against insecurity in order to achieve maximum effectiveness and efficiency that are possible.

9. Public Safety: Public safety could be guaranteed through maximum security provision for social practices that encompass different developmental programmes. This is because; hostility destroys unity, progress, and development. Hostility has been a major social problem. In other words, security encompasses measures that encourage and ensure safety of lives and properties.

10. Restoration of Rule of Law: Restoration of rule of law and human rights are very essential to the safety of lives and properties. It helps in preventing crime against humanities, and entrenches fairness, equity, and justice.

11. Confidence Building in Security Forces: One of the ingredients of safety and security of any society is confidence building. Confidence building enhances and encourages trust among the social members which is a medium that guarantees development, unity, and progress.

12. Security Education: This ensures and brings security consciousness or awareness to the door step of people. It broadens awareness of relevant social security to people. Through security education, many social elements would understand and have good orientations useful or essential for the prevention of dysfunctional activities that can truncate social peace at large.

13. Conducive Political Landscape: Good security system ensures better socio-political landscape vibrancy, where good governance is the ultimate goal. In other words, activities like terrorism, militancy, non-state actors' agitation, armed robbery and higher rates of criminalities in politics would be prevented through socio-political landscape conduciveness, which may be inimical to social vibrancy.

14. State and Nationality Co-operation: Security entrenchment encourages cooperation between or among the nationals of different socio-historical backgrounds at both the micro and macro levels. It fosters unity, progress, and development through exchange of ideas, technology, goods and services, etc. Such co-operation enhances efforts on combating insecurity and ensuring security of lives and properties, which often helped to combat illicit crime and weapons proliferation within the state or outside the state effectively. It encourages good socio-political wills and initiatives that guaranteed peaceful co-existence. Such efforts had led to seizure of many weapons at the borders of Mali, Mauritania, Gambia, Guinea-Bissau, and Nigeria along the Benin Republic, where criminals were arrested. It helps to reduce if not totally eradicated light weapons and ammunitions proliferation in circulation.

Security entrenchment bolsters national and regional safety, in term of reduction of crime rates and management of armed conflict, risk, political violence, terrorism, violent crime, combat or elimination of illegal circulation of small arms, ending of human trafficking and suffering.

The security importance as well includes: building of civil society structures, re-integration of displaced economy and people. It redefines the role of armed forces and police in maintaining law and order by bridging the gap between humanitarian needs and developmental laxity.

3.5 Challenges of Security

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) the following are challenges of security:

1. **Injustice:** This has been the major fundamental social problem among the living creatures. Injustice poses negative effects on human relations and security achievement. In other words, those who made the needed positive changes impossible are knowingly or unknowingly encouraging social menace like terrorism, insecurity, etc. An attempt to get social justice may threaten viability of social structures and measures once nothing tangible is done to achieve justice through the rule of law.
2. **Cultural Diversity:** This factor often threatens the viability of social security. This is because denies of human culture is the denied of human nature. In other words, no human being is ready for his/her culture to be rubbished, or ready to do away with his/her cultural endowment. They can hardly allow anybody to trample on their culture. That is, human's culture is multi-facial in nature because of challenges pose by environment. Coping strategies bring about cultural adaptive and belief systems that may be incompatible with some people's goals and values. Incompatibility sensitizes them to different social vices. Diversity in their cultural elements affects their orientations, perceptions, and belief systems including their security sense in society, most especially, among the people of different cultural backgrounds. The policy formulations and implementations could be jeopardised or sabotaged if nothing substantial is done on their cultural differences.
3. **Resources:** The lack or limited supply of resources is also crucial to the achievement of maximum security entrenchment. The implications of limited or lack of necessary facilities and man power cannot be underestimated in security management. They are recognised as fundamental factors that threaten security networks in a given society. Emphatically, once there is no adequate resource due to lackadaisical attitudes of the stakeholders' in-charge, the security networks of such society would be threatened, weakened, and even collapsed, if proper measures are not taken on time. It would end up in lackadaisical scenario.

4. Information Mis-management: In security practices, information is regarded as intelligent gathering. Any misconception or misperception of information would lead to distortion or wrong dissemination of information that constitutes insecurity of life and property. There is no doubt; information management is crucial or critical to the well being of every human nature, their needs and security networks. It is a sensitive mechanism of good relationship and endeavour. It must be carefully handled and managed. It ensures maximum safety and protection that are possible. Distortion of information constitutes lack of trust, confidence building, and insecurity in the long run.

5. Violent Acts: This is another serious threat to human survival and their security system. Violation of human rights creates confusion and builds lawlessness scenario that threatens social security and viable system in societies. It encourages or gives room for arms and ammunitions proliferation, child soldiers, and hopelessness situations. Any security system or network undergoing violent situation would collapse and constitute insecurity situation across the land. Mass destructions of lives and properties would be prevalent. There would be no orderliness and stableness. Violent situations encourage and entrench insecurity activities.

6. Misuse of Power: The misuse of power by the stakeholders through power differentials is another problem or challenge facing security systems, most especially, when the stakeholders are exercising asymmetrical power within a social system instead of symmetrical power. In other words, insecurity situation is the adverse effects of misuse of power. Misuse of reference and reward powers threaten the vibrancy of social security network, most especially, the exercising of god's fatherism in politics. The reward power enjoys by a political god's son or god's father may constitute serious threat to the security endow of a society once either of the parties fails to obey the rule of the games. This is because, god's fathers are found of using less privilege to achieve their political interest, either by political violence or trouble fomentation in politics, in terms of assassination and murdering of innocent souls. In other words, several factors like assassination and murder are responsible for the challenges facing security and safety of societies experiencing misuse of power.

7. Quest for Profits and Ends Mean: One of the major threats of security network and safety nowadays is un-restrained the quest for profits making and ends mean at all costs by people.

In the recent years, some people are found of engaging in illegal production or fabrication and trading of weapons of mass destruction as a mean of survival or access to profits making that can enriched quickly. Illegal weapons business or illicit trade constitutes serious threats to the safety or security of many societies. It encourages different civil strives and high rate of crimes, in term of armed robbery, murder and assassination activities. To curb this situation, therefore, requires some levels of co-operation among the social members in order to stop criminal acts and ensures safety of society.

8. Self-defense Security Reflex: The act of personal weapons procurement or possession of weapons without legal authorization constitutes serious insecurity situation into many societies. In order to combat insecurity and challenges pose by self security and defense reflex, better effective ways of managing and punishing illegal weapons possession or offenders of arms and weapons legislation in a severe manner should be entrenched in constitution. The failure to do so is proliferating insecurity of life and property.

9. Rise in Crimes: The rise in crime waves day by day in many societies constitutes serious challenges to security of social system. They are usually fuelled by demands for small arms and light weapons of mass destruction in many societies. The responses of citizens to the determination of security agents to combat crimes sometimes pave ways for weapon proliferations. Some security agents acquire sophisticated weapons without being accountable for them. Consequently, the rise in the numbers of such weapons and crimes lead to the increase in destructive weapons, which require better efforts in controlling their proliferation. For example, another consequence of easy access to firearms in West Africa is proliferation of ethnic militias. Although agitations of ethnic groups may have good intentions at the initial stage, but involvements in different armed struggles throw their credibility into serious questions. In addition, inter-ethnic rivalries or issues involving succession within or among the ethnic groups often lead to violent confrontations that constitute insecurity. Hence, there is need for security agents' co-operation in defeating unscrupulous activities of individuals and put to an end of weapon proliferations.

10. Cultural Practices: The weapons proliferation in some cases could be through people's traditional rites and ceremonies or other forms of traditional practices. For example, the Fulani and some others traditional communities in the northern part of Nigeria use swords, sticks and arrows to perform their traditional rites. The traditional hunters that live in the West and East of Nigeria take cutlasses and shooting of guns to the air to entertain their spectators during their traditional rites or festival.

Sometimes, they fired cannon to the air during their official ceremonies, while some use dynamite and other modern explosive objects in their occasions. Cultural attachment to weapons encourages proliferation of firearms locally, most especially, in the rural communities where culture and traditions enjoy great respects. Experience shows that it would be difficult for the armed forces and other security agencies to control or combat such of proliferation of weapons effectively in societies.

6.0 CONCLUSION

In this unit, the conceptualization of security system was added to the knowledge of students, which is evident that security is crucial phenomenon for human survival. The concept of security and its paradigms shift from fundamental military actions that solely focus on protection of territory and sovereignty was discussed. Human security concept that ensures the well-being of citizens was as well examined and broadens for better understanding of students on what the security entails. The fundamental factors of security importance and challenges were clarified through this unit for the people's understanding on why security is important to their progress.

5.0 SUMMARY

Every member of society needs to be concerned about security of lives and properties of their people and societies. The states security apparatus should as well be conscious of their duties. The activities that can ensure security of everybody should be allowed and encouraged in societies. Issue of unemployment or involvement of unemployed young school leavers in political violence must be addressed. Activities of political players should be positive and ensure secured environment.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. What is security and its attributes? Discuss.
2. Of what importance is security peace and development of a society?
3. Discuss the relevance of security to any society
4. Differentiate between Traditional security and Human security concepts
5. Why do you study security as a subject?
6. What the challenges of security?
7. What are the insecurity and its constituents?

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Abubakar, A. (2005). The Challenges of Security in Nigeria. <http://www.dawodu.com/abubakar.html>.
- Abubakar, D. (2004). *Leadership and the Challenges of Rebuilding A Nation*, in Adigun, A.B; Diamond, L and Onwudiwe, E. 2004. *Nigeria's Struggle For Democracy and Good Governance*. A Festschrift For Oyeleye Oyediran, Ibadan, Ibadan University Press.Pp154.

- Adebayo, A. (2005). *Africa Conflict, Peace and Governance Monitor: An annual publication on the state of governance in Africa*; African centre for Development and Strategic Studies, Dokun publishing house, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Adedoyin, A. (2011). *Elections and Nigeria's National Security*. In Albert, I.O. et al. (2011)-*Democratic Elections and Nigeria's National Security*. Peace and Conflict Studies Programme, Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Ibadan. John Archers (Publisher) Ltd. Pp 35-42.
- Adedoyin, A. (2006). "Corruption and Violent Conflict in Nigeria". An M.A. Dissertation, Submitted to the Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Adedoyin, A. (2007). *Urban Violence and Security*. A Course Guide and Course Material Written for the National Open University of Nigeria Headquarter, Lagos.
- Anatole, A and et al. (2005). *Combating the Proliferation of Small Arms and Light Weapons in West Africa; Handbook for the Training Armed and Security Forces*. PCASED and UNIDIR- United Nation
- Caroline, T. (2001). "Global Governance, Development and Human Security: Exploring the Links, Third World Quarterly, Vol. 22.
- Gavin, C and Robin, L. (2003). *Governing Insecurity: Democratic Control of Military and Security Establishments in Transitional Democracies*, Long House, Cambria, United Kingdom. Zed Books Ltd, 7 Cynthia Street, London.
- Wade, M.A. (2004). *Francophone/Anglophone West Africa's Approaches to Sub-regional Security and development in the Next Decade*. National War College, Abuja, Nigeria Graduation Lecture Series No 7, September.

UNIT 3 INTERNATIONAL HUMANITARIAN LAW AND ARMED CONFLICT

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Meaning/Definition of International Humanitarian Law
 - 3.2 Geneva Conventions on Humanitarian Law
 - 3.3 The Hague Conventions on Humanitarian Law
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

In this unit, the meaning/definition of International Humanitarian law/agencies and their impacts in respect to taking care of the victims or belligerents during the war or hostilities are examined and discussed. The activities of the humanitarian agencies that serve as relief packages and soft landing for displaced population are as well elicited and discussed.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- define or explain the basic sources of humanitarian law
- explain the role of humanitarian agencies in alleviating the sufferings of the victims of war
- state the position of Geneva Conventions on humanitarian situation

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Meaning/Definition of International Humanitarian Law

Humanitarian law is a set of international rules established by treaty or custom which are specifically intended to manage humanitarian problems directly arising from international and non- international armed conflicts. It protects persons and property that are, or may be, affected by armed conflicts by limiting the rights of war actors to use indiscriminate forces or assaults on populace and war victims. The sources of applicable humanitarian law Treaty are in four Geneva Conventions of 1949 and the Additional Protocol I of 1977. The same treaty is also applicable to non-international armed conflicts. That is, Article 3 of the Geneva Conventions and Protocol II of 1977.

The International Committee of the Red Cross [ICRC] and UNHCR also play significance role in alleviating the sufferings of people in war situations. In other words, except some limits are prescribed on the ways the wars are being prosecuted, the brutality and barbarism of war and hostilities may have no bounds.

The need to state the bounds of the methods use in prosecutions of war and hostility was dated and recognised right from the Middle Ages when Christianity and the Spirit of Chivalry made it possible to restrict the excesses of belligerents. That was why, Green states that it has often been assumed that the campaign for the trial and punishment of war criminals is a modern innovation, based on feelings of revenge and political ideology rather than on legal considerations. In fact it can be traced back to the code of Chivalry that prevailed in the Middle Ages among the orders of Knighthood, while in the early part of the sixteenth century Victoria was asserting that ‘a prince who has on hand a just war is *ipso jure* the judge of his enemies and can inflict a legal punishment on them, according to the scale of wrongdoing. Many of the international humanitarian laws are now embedded in various laws of war. In fact, the term ‘Laws of War’ is synonymous with the “international humanitarian law”. Thus, humanitarian law, or the laws of war, is the body of rules and principles stemming from the Geneva and Hague Conventions that dictate the treatment of combatants and non-combatants in times of conflict (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.1.1 The Geneva Conventions

The four Geneva Conventions of 1949 and their two Additional Protocols of 1977 are the principal instruments of humanitarian law. Popoola (2005:4) according to the Articles 9.9.9 and 10 of the Fourth Geneva Conventions, war should not constitute obstacle to any humanitarian activities that the International Committee of Red Cross or any other impartial humanitarian organisations may intend to do. Although it may be subject to the consent of the parties involved in undertaking the protection of wounded and sick persons, medical personnel and chaplains. Articles 7.7.7 and 8, and provisions 18 paragraphs 2 of protocol II -under the Articles 54 of the protocol 1 and 4 of protocol II respectively state that starvation is prohibited as a weapon of warfare. The convention allows free movement of medical materials, children cares, expectant mothers or maternity cases, hospital personnel and all necessary religious practices’ materials. It requires for easy passages of relief materials if the displaced populations are in needs.

“Article 1 of the Geneva Conventions creates basis in law by asking all the countries to undertake and ensure respect for human dignity in all circumstances, and not by merely expressing diplomatic moves on conflicting parties. The abandonment of victims and similar emergency situations without humanitarian assistance constitute serious threats to the survival of human life and dignity (Torrelli, 2003:6)”. The Conventions are as follow:

(A) First Geneva Convention

This first Convention was for the amelioration of the condition of the Wounded and Sick Armed Forces on the Field (Geneva, 1949). Article 2 of the Convention states that in time of peace and all cases of declaration of wars or armed conflicts, the Conventions are binding on those states or parties that signatory to the agreements. A state of war could exist if any of the parties contravene the law. The provision is necessary because of outbreak of war. The Convention was of the view that war takes place between the sovereign nations and required certain minimum standards of both military personnel and civilian forces war prosecution. Those who are not taking any active parts in the hostilities including the surrender members of the armed forces, or wounded once, must be treated humanely in all circumstances.

In other words, the law of war consists of conditions set up by Geneva and Hague conventions. These Conventions provide rules that govern treatment of individuals in wars and armed conflict situations. In the absence of such rules, harbouring and brutalisation of war situations would not have had boundary or limit. The killing of civilians, ill-treatment of prisoners of war, use of gas and sinking of merchant ships without securing safety of crew are unlawful. The Fourth Geneva Red Cross Conventions in 1949 protect prisoners of war, sick and wounded persons. The rules of international humanitarian law bind not only the states as such, but also individual members of armed forces, heads of states, ministers, officials and United Nations force in interventions to use violence against civilians. The law of armed conflict ensures or establishes certain standards for conduct of wars, or military actions by the parties involved.

All these are the treaties ameliorating conditions of wounded persons and prisoners of war in war situations. But this has been violated by some states and non-state actors on many occasions. Specified rules governing conduct of war are saddling by some discretionary powers of some powerful countries, which had been necessitated the establishment of these treaties, customary law, contribution of jurists and experts on international law and diplomatic relationship.

The law protects lives of captured and spares lives of civilians in war situations. It encourages belligerents' exchange of prisoners of war, that is, having a unilateral declaration of reciprocity agreement on how the prisoners of war should be treated. But this has been somehow remained elusive and uncertain like other forms of customary law (Olotunbosun, 2004).

The significant of law of wars alleviates sufferings of civilians or victims of armed conflicts who are in the hands of enemy, whether wounded, sick or had a shipwrecked, or prisoners of war. The law makes cases for those who do not or no longer participate in war as best as possible. It strives to balance conflicting interest of military necessity and humanitarian considerations, which was initially in customary international law, but now treating as international treaties. Humanitarian law prevents and alleviates human suffering wherever it finds. It protects life and health of people, and ensures respect for human dignity. The convention allows free movement of medical materials and hospital personnel, and all the necessary materials for religious practices and children care, expectant mothers and maternity cases. It requires armed groups to allow passage of relief materials if the displaced population lacked.

Article 23 of the Hague regulation of 1907 states that "it is forbidding to employ poison or poisonous weapons to kill or wound treacherously belligerents belonging to an hostile nation or Army, or to kill and wound enemy who have laid down his/her arms, or those who are no longer having the means of defence, or have surrendered at discretion". Article 3 of the 1949 Geneva Convention on non-international armed conflict states that persons taking no active part in war including members of the armed forces who have laid down their arms and those placed *hors de combat* by sickness, wounds, detentions or any other cases, shall not in any circumstances be treated inhuman. The collective punishments following these acts are and shall remain prohibited at the war time:

1. violence against life and person, particularly, murder of all kinds, mutilation, cruel treatment and torture
2. taking hostages;
3. outrages violence against human dignity, particularly, humiliating and degrading treatment;
4. passing of sentences and executions without previous trial;
5. the wounded, sick and shipwrecked persons shall be collected and cared for; and
6. children shall be provided care and aid requires.

The use of mines, body-traps and other devices that can cause body injuries like fragmentations or dismembers are prohibited. Article 4 of protocol II on fundamental rights guarantees and provides an example of prohibition. For example, it is prohibited to order that there shall be no survivors in any situations. Atrocities committed during internal armed conflicts should no longer be defended by the claims of domestic jurisdiction. Although, the 1949 Geneva Convention ameliorates condition of wounded, sick, and shipwrecked armed forces and guarantees better treatment of prisoners of war, protects civilian population in time of war and protects victims in war situations, but somehow breaches international principle of non-interference in the internal affairs of a member state. The carrying out of executions without previous judgment pronounced by a constituted court and affording of all judicial guarantee processes which are recognised as indispensable by civilised peoples are parts of the rules.

(B) Second Geneva Convention

The Second Convention is for the amelioration of the condition of wounded, Sick and Shipwrecked Members of Armed Forces at Sea (Geneva, 12 August 1949). Article 12 defines those wounded or shipwrecked, at sea should be treated humanely. According to the article 12, the member of armed forces and other persons mentioned in the following Article, who are at sea and wounded, sick or shipwrecked, shall be respected and protected in all circumstances. This is understood that the term 'shipwreck' means shipwreck from any cause including forced landings at sea by or from aircraft. Such persons shall be treated humanely and cared for by the parties to the conflict in whose power they may be, without any adverse distinction founded on sex, race, nationality, religion, political opinions, or any other similar criteria. Any attempts upon their lives, or violence to their persons, shall be strictly prohibited; in particular, they shall not be murdered or exterminated, subjected to torture or to biological experiments. They shall not willfully be left without medical assistance and care, nor shall the conditions expose them to contagion or infection being created.

Urgent medical reasons shall authorise priority in the order of treatment to be administered. The women of female genders shall be treated with all consideration due to their sex. More precisely, the principles underlying the second convention have been describe as follow:

- i. suffering has effect of peremptorily conferring equality. No distinction, apart from that based on strictly medical criteria, may be admitted...

- ii. the protection due to wounded, sick and shipwrecked is extended generally to the persons caring for them and to the property necessary to do so.
- iii. The rights of the wounded, sick, and shipwrecked persons are inalienable, as are those of medical and religious personnel.
- iv. at the outbreak of a given-armed conflict, any state that is a party to (the convention) become responsible for the protection provided by the law.

Rezek makes an interesting distinction between reason and 'the feeling of humanity' while describing the underlying principles of the Second Convention. He asserts that although reason would 'accord respect' to those who are incapable of doing harm, the 'feeling of humanity' underlines the more active duties of protection that are listed in the Article 12.

(C) Third Geneva Convention

The Third Convention refers to the treatment of prisoners-of-war (Geneva, 12 August 1949). Prisoners-of-War (POWs) are defined by Article 4 that fall into specific categories:

- (1.) the members of armed forces of a party to the conflict, as well as members of militias or volunteer corps forming part of such armed forces.
- (2.) the members of other militias and other volunteer corps including those of organised resistance movements belonging to a party to the conflict and operating in or outside their own territory. Even if the territory is occupied, provided that such militias or volunteer corps including such organised resistance movements fulfill the following conditions:
 - (a.) that of being commanded by a person responsible for his/her subordinates;
 - (b.) that of having a fixed distinctive sign recognisable at a distance;
 - (c.) that of carrying arms openly;
 - (d.) that of conducting their operations in accordance with the laws and customs of war.
- (3.) the members of regular armed forces who profess allegiance to a government or an authority not recognised by the detaining power.
- (4.) the persons who accompany the armed forces without actually being members of military aircraft crews, war correspondents, supply contractors, members of labour units or services responsible for the welfare of the armed forces, provided that they have received authorisation from the armed forces which they accompany, who shall provide them for that purpose with an identity card similar to the annexed model.

(5.) the members of crews including masters, pilots and apprentices of the merchant marine and the crews of civil aircraft of the parties to the conflict who do not benefit by more favourable treatment under any other provisions of international law.

(6.) the inhabitants of a non-occupied territory, who on the approach of the enemy spontaneously take up arms to resist the invading forces, without having time to form themselves into regular armed units, provided they carry arms openly and respect the laws and customs of war.

The Article 13 specifies the standard of treatment for the prisoners of wars, which states thus:

(1.) the prisoners of war must at all times be humanely treated. Any unlawful act or omission by the detaining power causing death or seriously endangering the health of a prisoner of war in its custody is prohibited, and will be regarded as a serious breach of the present convention.

(2.), in particular, no prisoner of war may be subjected to physical mutilation or medical or scientific experiments of any kind, which are not justified by the medical, dental or hospital treatment of the prisoner concerned and carried out in his interest.

(3.) the prisoners of war must at all times be protected, particularly, against the acts of violence, intimidation, assaults/insults and public curiosity.

(D) Fourth Geneva Convention

The Fourth Convention has to do with the protection of civilians in the time of war (Geneva, 12 August 1949). The Geneva Convention seeks for protection of civil populations against the consequences of war. The parties to a conflict shall establish 'safety zone' (Article 14) and 'neutral zones' (Article 15) (both in part II). Safety zones protect the 'wounded, sick and aged persons, children under fifteen, expectant mothers and mothers of children under seven'.

Neutral zones, on the other hand, protect:

- (a) the wounded and sick combatants or non-combatants;
- (b) the civilian persons who take no part in hostilities and who while they reside in the zones, perform no work of a military character.

There as well exist of a special provision in the Article 16, which stresses that 'the wounded and sick as well as the infirm and expectant mothers shall be the object of particular protection and respect'. The Articles 17, 18, 19 and 21 also cover everything pertaining to the civilian persons in the time of war.

3.1.2 The Hague Conventions

The First Hague Peace Conference was convened in 1899 with the objective of revising the laws and customs of war that had been elaborated at the earlier conference of Brussels, but had not been ratified. Certain rules that came into force on 4 September 1900 were agreed upon or accepted at the conference. Some of the provisions and the principles that underline the conference are thus:

(A.) The Conference agreed a Convention (Hague II) with respect to the laws and customs of war. For example, section II, chapter I, deals with the 'means of injuring of the enemy, sieges and bombardments'. its Article 22 states the Fundamental Principle:

(1.) the right of the belligerents to adopt 'means of injuring from the enemy was not unlimited'.

(2.) certain declarations were also made. The contracting parties agreed to abstain from the use of bullets that expand or flatten easily in the human body and cause unnecessary suffering.

(3.) the contracting powers also agreed to abstain from the use of asphyxiating or deleterious gases. A further Protocol for the prohibition of the use of asphyxiating, poisonous, or other gases; and the bacteriological methods of warfare also came into force in 1928.

(4.) Section III of Hague II, Article 43, 46, 50, 53 and 56, can also be studied for further and proper understanding.

(B.) The Second Peace Conference at the Hague continued the development of the law of war. Varieties of subjects were agreed upon by the Conventions, and came into force on 26 January 1910. For example, a closely look at Article 1 of Convention IV shows that it is concerned with the 'qualification of belligerent'.

The laws, rights, and duties of war apply not only to armies, but also to militia and volunteer corps fulfilling the following conditions:

(1.) to be commanded by a person responsible for his subordinates;

(2.) to have a fixed distinctive emblem recognisable at a distance;

(3.) to carry arms openly; and

(4.) to conduct their operations in accordance with the laws and customs of war.

In the countries where militia or volunteer corps constitute the arm, or form parts of it are included under the denomination of 'army'. The article states that the laws of war apply not just to armies, but also to less formally organised groups of combatants, provided that they satisfy the conditions enumerated.

4.0 CONCLUSION

This unit discussion reveals many of the international humanitarian laws and they embedded in some various laws of war or that of laws made for the regulation of wars in societies. The objectives of the humanitarian law were that all the war prosecutions should have human face and avoid wanton destruction of lives and properties.

5.0 SUMMARY

The Hague Convention of 1900 represents important foundation for the laws of war, and laid down new standards in relation to law and customs of wars. It also prohibited the use of mass destruction of lives and properties weapons. It created rules for the military occupation of belligerents' territory. The Hague Convention 1910 clarifies the definition of belligerents, while its 1965 Convention refers to the Protection of Cultural Property in the course of Armed Conflict. The Geneva Conventions of 1949 on the other hand and its two Additional Protocols of 1977 are the instruments that brewed the establishment of humanitarian law.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Compare and contrast the similarities between international humanitarian law and international law of human rights.
2. State and explain categories of detainees who are regarded as prisoners of wars.
3. What are the sources of international humanitarian law?
4. State the main provisions of the first Convention for the Amelioration of the condition of the wounded and sick in armed conflicts.

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READINGS

- Adedoyin, A. 2016. *Social and Psychological Implications of Human Rights Crises and Insecurity in Mano-River Region of West Africa*. In Journal of Nigerian Society for Physical Research, Uturu, Abia State University, Nigeria. Vol. 6 No.1. Pp 112-132
- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. Second Edition, Pp 1-560.
- Amnesty International. (2008). *Liberia: Greater Efforts Needed for Reintegration of Former Female Fighters*. Amnesty International Website (Accessed in 2010).
- Geneva Convention, (1949). *Basic Rules and their Additional Protocols*. United Nations Reports.
- Hay, A. (1988). *International Dimension of Human Law*. London: Martinus Nijhoff Publishers. (ISBN 9231023713).
- Prosecutions and Truth Commissions', pp. 1131 – 1195.

- International Committee of Red Cross, (2004). Public Information Division, 19 Avenue de la Paix, CH-1202 Geneva, Switzerland.
- Olatunbosun, A. (2004). "The International Committee of Red Cross (ICRC)". Nigeria, Obafemi Awolowo Ile-Ife University.
- Popoola, A.O. (2005). *The International Criminal Court's Regime and Crimes against Humanity*. A Paper Commission for Presentation at the Sensitisation Workshop on the Intervention Criminal Court, Nigeria institute of Advanced Legal Studies, Abuja.
- Ratner, S. R. and J. S. Abrams *Accountability for Human Rights Atrocities in International Law*. Second Edition. Oxford: Oxford University Press. (ISBN 0198298714 (pbk)).
- Steiner and Alston, Chapter 14: 'Massive Human Rights Tragedies: Secretary General, (2008). *United Nations General Assembly 20004 Report*. Assistance to Refugees, Returnees and Displaced Persons in Africa.
- Torrelli, M (2003). *From Humanitarian Assistance to Intervention on Humanitarian Ground*, UNHCR Paper.
- UNCHR, (2004). *Stability Returning to Liberia but Challenges Remain, UN Report*. Retrieved May 31st, 2007 from <http://www.un.org/apps/neas/stories.asp>
- United Nations Department of Public Information Africa, (2005). Renewal Vol. 18 No.4.
- United Nations, (2000). Optional Protocol to the Convention on the Rights of the Child in the Involvement of Children in Armed Conflict, CRC-OP-CAC, New York, United States.
- United Nations. (2010). General Assembly Report on the Activities of the Office of Internal Oversight Services, Sixty-Fourth Session

UNIT 4 WAR CRIMES AND WAR GUILTY

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 UN Article II and III on Genocide
 - 3.2 The International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Yugoslavia
 - 3.3 The International Criminal Tribunal for the Former Rwanda
 - 3.4 Trial of Saddam Hussein
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

In this unit, the study examines various violations of the rules of wars and armed conflicts, and explains the manners in which some wars were conducted in the past. It discusses the prohibitions of killings of innocent and defenseless civilians, indiscriminate bombing, use of chemical weapons, killing of wounded soldiers, ill treatment of prisoner of Wars, attacks on non-military targets and genocide or wanton destructions of lives and properties. The crime against humanity and genocide carried out by some people and violations of human rights are as well discussed.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, the students should be able to:

- define war crime and war guilty;
- discuss the nature of war crimes, genocide and crimes against humanity;
- explain and account for the role of the *ad hoc* tribunals for the former Yugoslavia and Rwanda
- describe the trial of Saddam Hussein and that of former Liberia President Charles Taylor

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 War Crimes War Guilty

War crimes can be defined or explained as violations of civilian rights by some war prosecutors or countries using military actions that the international laws of war prohibited. It is an act of breaching the laws of war and armed conflicts. That is why; the criminal law requires the rules of law in all the interplays in human society. Such crimes are determined by the treaties and conventions of humanitarian law. The crimes are divided into two broad categories namely:

- (a) Crime against peace; and
- (b) Crimes against humanity.

a. Crime Against Peace

Crime against peace includes the planning, preparation, or initiation of war aggression against a peaceful society. In other words, neither should a country take aggressive war against another country without observing the war treaties or conventions nor a country intervenes into any wars without observing Geneva and Hague Treaties or Conventions. The prohibition of crimes against peace is embodied in the charter of the United Nations, the Nuremberg Charter, which is the law under which the Nazis were tried, and a treaty called the Kellogg – Briand Pact. Nuremberg Charter, therefore, defines as:

- (a) Crimes against peace
 - i. Planning, preparation, initiation or waging of war of aggression or a war in violation of international treaties, agreements or assurances;
 - ii. Participation in a common plan on conspiracy for the accomplishment of any of the acts mentioned (I).

Article 2131 of the UN Charter requires that international conflicts should be managed by peaceful means in such that international peace, security, and justice are not endangered. Article 2141 requires that force shall not be used in any manner that is inconsistent with the purposes of the UN regulations. Its Article 33 requires that the parties to a conflict shall first and foremost seek a solution by making an inquiry, negotiation, mediation, conciliation, arbitration, judicial settlement, resort to regional agencies, or any other peaceful means. Until all such means are exhausted before the force can be applied or used.

(b.) Crime against Humanity

These are violations of right of the belligerents and the rules of engagement in the wars or armed conflict prosecutions. The violations include the followings: (1) killing of indiscriminate of the civilians, indiscriminate bombing, the use of weapons of mass destructions, the killing of defenseless soldiers, ill treatment of the prisoners of wars and attacks on non-military targets. There are eleven international texts defining crimes against humanity, which are slightly differs in their definitions of crime and their legal processes. However, these in common:

(1.) They are all referred to specific act(s) of violence against persons irrespective of whether the person is a national or non-national of countries and whether the acts are committed during the war or time of peace, and (2.) The acts are products of persecution against identifiable group of persons irrespective of their group or purpose of persecution. Such policy also could be addressed to widespread or systematic conduct of the war prosecutors, which contain in the commission of specific crimes. The list of the specific crimes is within the crimes against humanity expanded in Article 6(c) of the international military tribunal that includes rape and torture as modified by the Four-Power Protocol of October 6, 1954. It defines crimes against humanity as: Murder, extermination, enslavement, deportation, or other inhumane acts committed against civil population before or during the war, or persecutions on political, racial or religious grounds in the execution of or in connection with any crimes within the jurisdiction of the Tribunal, whether or not in violation of the domestic law of the country where perpetrated. The laws are embodied in various treaties including most importantly the Hague Convention of 1907, the Geneva Conventions of 1949, and Protocol I addition to Geneva Conventions. They are all reflects similar set of rules on violation of the rules of war, which are war crimes. Hence, no one is immune from prosecution for such crimes, even the heads of state or president (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2 The United Nations Article II and III on Genocide

Referencing the earlier discussion on war crimes, the crimes against humanity, or crimes against peace, in this section, will be viewed through the acts of genocide and rape which will unveil the differences in the war offences.

3.2.1 Genocide

The word genocide is a compound word or a hybrid consisting of the Greek genes meaning race, nation or tribe; and the Latin *cide* meaning killing. The concept of genocide came into being in Europe in the year of 1933 – 1945 during the quest for formulation of a legal concept of destruction of human groups. The Nazis in their course of inordinate ambition embarked upon a gigantic plan to permanently change the population balance in the occupied area of Europe in their favour. They planned to wipe out the entire society so that the Germany might win a permanent victory, whether directly through the military subjugation or indirectly through the biological weapons of mass destruction. The intention was for Germany to defeat its neighbours. The planned crime of genocide involves wide range of actions including not only deprivation of life but also prevention of life through abortion, sterilisations or devices considerably endangering life and health in terms of artificial death in specific camps, deliberate separation of families for depopulation purposes, etc. All these actions are subordinated to the criminal intent to destroy or to cripple permanently, certain human group. The acts are directed against populace. Many individuals are selected for destruction only because they belong to another group. The concept of genocide has different definitions, but the above context, contextualized the genesis of the crime.

The United Nations General Assembly thereafter adopted the Conventions on Prevention and Punishment for Genocide crime in 1948. The definition of the crime of genocide could be found in the Articles II and III of the Convention (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020). The Article II states that genocide has two elements:

1. the mental element, meaning, the intent to destroy in whole or in part of a national, ethnical, racial or religious group, as such; and
2. the physical element which includes five acts described in sections a, b, c, d and e. stating a crime must include both elements to be called ‘genocide’.

Article II

According to the present Convention, genocide means any of the following acts committed with the intent to destroy in whole, or in part, of a national, ethnical, racial, and religious group, such as:

1. killing members of the group;
2. causing serious bodily or mental harm to the members of the groups;
3. deliberately inflicting on the group conditions of life calculated to bring about its physical destruction in whole or part;
4. imposing measures intended to prevent births within the group; and
5. forcibly transferring the children of the group to another group.

Article II

The following acts shall be punishable:

1. Genocide
2. Conspiracy to commit genocide
3. Direct and public indictment to commit genocide
4. Attempt to commit genocide
5. Complicity in genocide.

As revealed above, one would observe that convention clarifies the elements of the crime just as it is obtainable in all criminal offences that have both mental and physical elements. The mental element is defined by the “intent to destroy” and the physical by the list in Article II.

The Article II expands the definition by detailing the various acts that are punishable as genocide. A legal definition is clearly essential to the prosecution of genocide, but one needs to be conscious of the fact that genocide is not just a legal phenomenon but needed to be examined as thus:

1. the events (of the Holocaust) obeyed no law and no law can be derived from them;
2. complete understanding would require identification with all the victims and executioners, which is impossible;
3. no language is sufficient to communicate the Holocaust experience;
4. the language of science in particular fails the suffering of the victims (Freeman, 1991, p.185).

However, Freeman argues that law has unable to understand genocide. It is therefore imperative for people to view the phenomenon genocide from other disciplines’ perspectives, in order to obtain a fuller comprehensive understanding of the nature of genocide. The development of the jurisprudence of the International Criminal Law as per genocide, war crimes and crime against humanity takes the study to the foundation of two ad hoc UN tribunals, that is, the International Criminal Tribunal for the former Yugoslavia (ICTY) and the International Criminal tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR).

3.3 The International Criminal Tribunal for Yugoslavia (ICTY)

The International Criminal Tribunal for Yugoslavia (ICTY) was established by the Security Council in 1993. The tribunal was vested with the responsibility of dealing with the violations of international humanitarian law perpetrated during the war and 'ethnic cleansing' caused by the break-up of the territories that comprised the former Yugoslavia. The International community opined that the tribunal should assist in the process of reconciliation and reconstruction of Yugoslavia after the war or hostility.

In the course of bringing humanitarian law violator (s) or offender to book, the Serbia, one of the Republics that made up of the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia, cooperated and handed over to court Slobodan Milosevic, the former President of the Federal Republic of Yugoslavia and other major figures. The death of Milosevic in custody in 2006, coupled with his failure to cooperate with the court posed a lot of difficulties to the tribunal which eventually led to the problems of legitimacy of the entire process. Although the ICTY's foundation status gave up its jurisdiction over the war crimes, genocide and crime against humanity, a critical examination of the ways and manners by which the Tribunal conducted the indictment and hearings against Milosevic reveals the transparency and adherence to fundamental human rights nature of the trial.

On May 24, 1999, the tribunal indicted Milosevic, along with four other senior officials and officers, for war crimes and crimes against humanity committed by Yugoslavia and Serbia troops under their command in Kosovo in early 1999. The crimes include the slaughter of hundreds of ethnic Albanians, forcible deportation of hundreds of thousands of people, and persecution based on racial, religious, and political identification. The tribunal indicted Milosevic a second time on October 29, 2001, for crimes he allegedly committed in Croatia. The indictment charges Milosevic with multiple counts of murder, detention, deportation and other atrocities committed during the attempted ethnic cleansing of Croatia from 1991 to 1992. On December 11, 2001, the ICTY issued a third indictment against Milosevic for crimes in Bosnia. The indictment includes one count of genocide, and an additional twenty-seven counts of war crimes and crimes against humanity arising from the conflict in Bosnia – Herzegovina between 1992 and 1995.

The new charges cover the shelling of Sarajevo; and the mass murder of thousands of Muslim men and boys at Srebrenica. The UN-proclaim 'safe area' for Omarska detention camp (Amnesty International). The Tribunal suffered a lot of criticisms because there was no competence under Chapter VII of the UN Charters to establish a court to 'maintain or restore international peace and security'. The establishment of the Tribunal was also assorted as having a political undertone for political supremacy of great powers over the smaller states. This is because the mechanism of *ad hoc* tribunal set up was usually targeted against less powerful states. Whenever the powerful states perpetrated the same or similar crimes they are allowed to go scot-free or unchallenged by the same United Nations Security Council. The question is that does the Security Council in fact have the legal right to set up the Tribunal under Chapter VII of the Charters...?

In other words, a subsidiary body could not have competence falling outside the competence of its principal. It is questionable whether the General Assembly is competent to administer justice. The Security Council similarly could as well say incompetent to administer justice, but competent to handle matters relating to peace and security. More importantly, the General Assembly is unable to make binding decisions that make it a mandatory for states to cooperate with the Tribunal. Nevertheless, for example, the Article 24 (1) of the UN Charter obliges all the member states to accept and carry out the decisions of the Security Council. (Hirsch, 2003:74). The argument that the ICTY was imposed by the 'supremacy of the great powerful states is difficult to refute. Thus, it is a variation of the criticisms that the Nuremberg Tribunal dispensed 'victor's justice', and to some extent, would always be in attendant of the tribunals that resolve conflict situations. The supporters of the ICTY see the work as a vital contribution to the development of international criminal law.

Perhaps, the most rounded conclusion of the work of the Tribunal to date is that of Richard Dicker, the director of Human Rights Watch's International Justice Programme, which states thus:

This trial is a great step forward for justice, but equally, notable are those indicted war criminals missing from the dock. Too many of the most senior Serb indictees remain at large. The blame lies with Balkan governments that failed to cooperate with the tribunal and with the NATO, which has for six years operated in Bosnia without rounding up Milosevic's conspirators.

Steiner and Alston Pages 1143 – 1173 provide a variety of materials that relate to the ICTY that can be used to elaborate the theme described in this section.

3.3.1 The International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR)

The International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR) was created by the Security Council under the authority of Chapter VII of the UN Charters. The ICTR was set up to try those members of the majority Hutu ethnic grouping who had committed genocide and other serious crimes against the minority Tutsi. Since its establishment, the ICTR had indicted over 70 suspects, and has achieved 12 successful convictions. Among those convicted are former Ministers of the Rwanda Government, senior military figures, and Jean Kambanda, who was the Prime Minister of the Rwanda Government during the genocide. Kambanda is the first Head of Government to be convicted for genocide. The impact of the ICTR was also significant because of the opportunity it presents to develop international criminal law: Those decisions forged a substantial body of case of law (jurisprudence), which is already being used by the International Criminal Tribunal for the former Yugoslavia and by the national courts all over the world. It will provide a sound foundation for the work of the International Criminal Court (ICC) when that institution starts its work.

Perhaps, most importantly, the tribunal aids the process of reconciliation in Rwanda and internationally. It is hoped that this will encourage a shift in the culture of international law. In Africa, as the commentators have pointed out, weak central institutions have given rise to a 'culture of impunity' for warlords and dictators. Above all, the Rwanda Tribunal through its work made and continues to make a substantial contribution to the replacement of culture of impunity by culture of accountability. As it was noted above, a new climate of opinion regarding the effectiveness of international humanitarian law has emerged as a result of the visible and practical success of the two ad hoc Tribunals. Further evidence of this was the fact that the creation of such Tribunal is now automatically called for in conflict situations as far as Sierra Leone, Cambodia, and East Timor.

Indeed it has been noted that those responsible for other conflicts in Africa should be prosecuted before the Arusha Tribunal. A provision to that effect was included in the Lusaka agreement intended to bring an end to the conflicts in Democratic Republic of Congo.

3.3.2 The Trial of Saddam Hussein

In 2003, the Coalition Provisional Authority, prior to the handover of sovereignty to the Iraqi Government at Saddam Hussein, established a special Tribunal to begin the trial process of Saddam Hussein, the late former President of Iraq and other senior members of his regime. In August 2005, the Iraqi Transitional National Assembly approved the creation of a war crimes tribunal. Saddam's trial began on 19 October 2005. This represents a significant period of time since his arrest in December 2003. This delay is partly explicable by the unusual circumstances in which the War Crimes Tribunal tried Saddam and other members of his regime. On November 5, 2006, Saddam Hussein was convicted of crimes against humanity by a Baghdad court and sentenced to death by hanging. He was found guilty over his role in the killing of 148 people in mainly Shia town of Dujail in 1982. His brother Barjan al-Tikriti was also sentenced to death, as he was Iraq's former chief judge, Awad Hamed al-Dander. His former Vice-President Taha Yassin Ramadan got a life jail, while three others received 15 years prison terms, and another co-defendant, Baath party official Mohammed Azawi Ali, was acquitted.

3.3.2.1 Criticisms about Saddam Hussein's Trial

A lot of criticisms and counter-criticisms were raised by the Human Rights Groups, Nations, and International Personalities in the field of politics and international Law about how the crimes of the past would be prosecuted immediately Saddam was apprehended. A very important question that confronted Iraq, the occupying power in Iraq and the international community was what kind of court should prosecute Saddam Hussein and others. The three (3) basic options were:

- a national court with Iraqi prosecutors and judges;
- an international court formally established by the United Nations Security Council; and
- a mixed domestic and international courts.

The new International Criminal Court was regarded as not an option in part, because, it cannot prosecute crimes committed before July 1, 2002. Most of the serious crimes in Iraq's past were committed before then. But it is important to note that the International Criminal Court (ICC) was created precisely for situations like this.

A National Court with Iraqi Prosecutors and Judges

This option was generally perceived as the best option provided the national authorities can hold fair and effective trials, and make the trial more accessible to the victims and their families. The National judges and prosecutors help to create the feeling of "ownership" of the important process of accountability. But the past traditional records revealed that criminal trials in Iraq have been very brief proceedings lasting only a few hours or at most a few days. Sometimes, the people who were accused of committing crimes were thrown into prison without any trials at all, or executed on spot. In the light of the above, Iraqi jurist (judges, prosecutors, lawyers, and others in the judicial system) do not have the experience needed or required to conduct a trial that is as complicated as the trial of Saddam Hussein, and others accused of serious human rights crimes.

An International Court Formally Established by the United Nations Security Council

The United Nations Security Council passed resolutions establishing the International Criminal Tribunal for the former Yugoslavia (ICTY) and the International Criminal Tribunal for Rwanda (ICTR) as a result of the genocides in Bosnia and Rwanda. These courts are staffed primarily by international judges, prosecutors, and court personnel. The tribunals were located outside the countries where the crimes occurred for political and security reasons – the ICTY is in Hague, Netherlands, and the ICTR is in Arusha, Tanzania. This made the proceedings less accessible to victims, their families, and those in whose names the crimes were committed. Although the tribunals generally performed well, but the trial processes were very expensive and progressed slowly.

3.3.2.2 A Mixed Domestic – International Court

The main example of this type of tribunal was the Special Court for Sierra Leone (SCSL). The SCSL was run by both international and Sierra Leonean judges, prosecutors, and staff. They examined various violations of international humanitarian law, or laws of war, committed after November 1996 in Sierra Leone's horrific civil war.

4.0 CONCLUSION

In the light of the above discussion, it was revealed that International Community (that is, the great powers) displayed double standards in the course of bringing war crime offenders to book by not allowing transparency, fair hearing, and adherent to fundamental human rights in some trials. The clarifications war crime and war guilty were also made.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, some trials of violators of human rights, or abuses, as well as war crimes, crime against humanity and genocide were discussed. Various criticisms against the ways and manners by which the trials of violators law of war were examined.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Was the trial of Saddam Hussein conformed with the dictates of international law? Discuss.
2. What are the arguments made on the propositions of International Criminal Tribunal imposed by the supremacy of powerful states? Discuss with the relevant examples.
3. What is war crime and war guilty?

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

Adedoyin, A. 2020. *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. Second Edition, Pp 1-560.

Dupuy, T.N. (1992) *Understanding War: History and Theory of Combat*. London. Leo Cooper.

.Bracken,P.(2002)*Trauma, Culture,Meaning and Philosophy*. London. Whurr Publishers.

Mc Afee B. (1998) *Instead of Medicine."*Report on the Bosnian Mental Health Pilot Project. London: Refugee Action.

[://www.courtsw.com/trials/Saddam/04/11/2008](http://www.courtsw.com/trials/Saddam/04/11/2008)

[://www.hrw.org/english/docs/2003/12/19/iraq6770.htm04/11/2008](http://www.hrw.org/english/docs/2003/12/19/iraq6770.htm04/11/2008)

http://www.sourcewatch.org/index.php?=Trial_of_Saddam_Hussein

UNIT 5 IMPACT OF WAR ON INTERNATIONAL COMMUNITY

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
- 3.1 Impact of War on International Community
- 3.2 Post Conflict/War Peacebuilding Programmes
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

There is no action that did not have its consequences. The experience of war reveals that violence begets or encourages unnecessary wanton destruction of lives and properties, torture, rape and extreme abuses of human rights in societies. The effects remain un-change on the victims unless there are substantial efforts in alleviating the sufferings of the belligerents. Its effects are usually dissociated and disorientated developmental aspiration in societies. The victims are vengeful because of the “traumatisation” or “brutalization” of human nature in them and promoted “cycles of violence” if the situations are not well addressed or improved their lives. Their attempts to revenge through emotional reactions are grievously harmful, dangerous and sometimes led to a total collapse of societies. Better efforts gearing towards judicious management of situations, positive modification of belligerents’ attitudes toward peace, reorientation of the victims, conscientisation and educational trainings for prevention or amelioration of the phases of pre-war, violence and post-violence situations that transform or transit from violence situations to peace are required from collective individuals. There is need for effective ceasefire processes that ensure post-war peacebuilding processes such as disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, reconciliation, reconstruction, and conflict transformation. However, the impact of war on international community is the discourse of this unit.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- identify the effects of war on the international community;
and

- clarify various effects of war or violent conflict and how they could be properly managed.

2.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Impact of War on International Community

(1.) Loss of lives and properties

War situation is usually warranted the wanton loss of lives and properties in societies. Its consequences create unwanted orphans, widow or widower and bereaved families. The vulnerable groups such as women, children, aged people, and disabilities are dearly paid for it mostly in societies. Many of them are abandoned and liable to all kinds of circumstances in war situations. They suffer mal-nutrition, mal-treatment, trafficking and force labours, and totally displaced from their homes. The violence suffered by them retains and depicts their physical appearance, in terms of traumas and psychological effects. They exchanged their rights and values for basic needs to survive at all times. The abandoned spouses and ladies engage in prostitution or sexual exploitation and harassment for their survival. They have no opportunity to attain basic education that can improve them, and live in unhygienic conditions or environment.

The means of education remain social interactions or relations with their neighbours, which war is always denied. Some of them become miscreants along the line. Many children wandering around without missions, because, they have been separated from their parents. During the wars, the women attended to the sick, wounded persons, buried the dead, and participated in some initiatives that brought about peace. Their experience tells the untold suffering conditions of the female gender pass through in war situations, where they participate in dual capacities as victims and actors that fend for the families and society. They maintain social fabric system and replaced some destroyed social services, which make primes advocate of peace. They suffer a lot in war situations. Approximately, 28 million people had been killed in more than 150 major armed conflicts since 1945 (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(2.) Forceful Displacement of Persons

The recent time global village has been known for huge displacement of persons in terms of refugee flows and Internally Displaced Persons that pose both the continents and international community humanitarian crises of enormous magnitude. According to the Office of the United Nations High Commission for Refugees (UNHCR) and United States Committee for Refugee (USCR) in January 1st, 1995, there were 6.7 million refugees on the continent, representing 46.2 percent of the world's refugee population in Africa.

An estimated 2 million persons had been internally displaced within the borders of their own countries (37 percent of the world's total of 5.4 million). In several African countries (Angola, Eritrea, Liberia, Mozambique, Rwanda, Somalia, and Sudan), at least half of the total population have been forced to flee at some points. This further complicated by the length of time that some classes of conflicts last. During the war, many people are displaced either internally or become refugees in their neighbouring countries. Their ordeals are always grievousness, because, their flights are sudden and unprepared. The orphans and homeless children among them increase in numbers every day, and many of them are exposed to crimes or violent acts. The proliferation of wars and humanitarian crises impair their physical and mental illness to the extent that they ventured into any unethical behaviours like stealing, sexual exploitation, and abuses of rights in their camps. On many occasions, they are starved and maltreated. Many limb were amputated, genitals were mutilated, died, tortured or raped. They spread across the borders and engulfed severe humanitarian crises on their host countries. For example, the postulation of refugees and internally displaced persons' numbers in Africa show that armed conflicts were responsible for the massive displacement of persons. Another way by which huge displaced population flows occurred was through the crises of neighbouring countries (Adekanye, 1996:167).

(3.) Proliferations of Illicit Drugs, Arms and weapons

Another impact associated with wars is problem of illegal supply of illicit substances and objects like arms, weapons of mass destructions, and drugs across the lands. Their widespread distribution and sales as well as various cross-border regional and global linkages proliferates insecurity across the globe. The phenomenon of organized crime and illegal training of men and women to take arms including children who are child soldiers and girls combatants are parts of impacts of wars on international community. Without undergoing a proper disarmament and demobilisation process, reintegration and rehabilitation programme, and assist with necessary means of socio-economic reinsertion after the wars pose serious security threats to international community at all times. The issue of illegal surplus of weapons is always reminded international community of the needs for post-war programme such as disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, and reintegration of ex-combatants and war victims. The past events and records show that the total objectives of demobilization, disarmament, and reintegration are hardly realized or accomplished unless the fundamental problems of poverty and underdevelopment are addressed.

Another factor is the issue of ex-combatants possessing guns and hardly surrenders them at the point of disarmament and demobilization. Once they are disarmed without the means of survival or survival strategies; they may turn to their guns as means of survivals without any remorse. In other words, the war belligerents and ex-combatants need to taking care, if not they may resort to illegal use of stock piled weapons used during the war. They need properly reintegration back to society and have sustainable means of livelihood for them not to 'return to war prosecution (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(4.) Abuse of Human Rights

Every war situation robs people their rights. It usually deprives people of their territory, resources, possessions, socio-political systems, and means of livelihood. For examples: The protracted wars between Israel against Palestine, sanctions and prosecution of war against Iraq by the Allied forces have always been depriving their citizens' rights over their territory. Many people were killed and their properties were destroyed. They also affected international relations among nations.

(5.) Environmental Pollution/Health Problem

The war prosecutions and preparations are said to be the "likelihood" of the largest sources of pollution on the earth planet. For example, chemical or toxin bombs dropped and exploded during the United State of America war against Vietnam killed or injured about 400,000 people and resulted into two decades of world's highest rate of spontaneous abortion. Testing of war arms and weapon of mass destructions are as well harmed virtually everyone living in that area. The Nuclear weapons testing could as well serve as examples with their devastating effects on populace resulting from radioactive elements. Nuclear and other testing displaced societies such as Vieques Island in Puerto Rico, Hiroshima Nagasaki in Japan. There were other cases of stray missile being deliberately tested in the recent time by the North Korea and Russia that frightening the global village on what were their intentions (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(6.) War and Insecurity

Security is a strategic coping mechanism that must be designed to ensure peaceful co-existence and development at large. It guarantees absence of fears, threats, anxieties, tensions, and the apprehensions of losing lives, liberty, properties, goals, values, and so forth. It is very essential to sustainable development of any societies. Security is a pre-condition for people's improvement, particularly, the poor. However, security is always compromised during the war situation.

Different crimes and atrocities such as killings, kidnappings, robberies, destructions of properties, etc. are being committed by war prosecutors. The rogue attitudes, behaviours, characters, corrupt practices, political violence and thuggeries, armed robbers, assassins or hire killers, 419-scams, etc. could as well be the effects of the war threatening the international community (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(7.) Disintegration of Global Economy System

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) wars or armed conflicts no matter how little always have profound short and long-term consequences on economy development, resources, and social institutions of warring societies. It destroys international economies by creating discords among the nations or skew their productivity abilities or activities toward hopelessness situations such as taking care of displaced persons, acquisitions of destructive weapon and substances. The post-war economy functions as well always be at spurt and intermittent in relationships. The international wars distorted or collapsed economy co-operations among the nations. During the wars, public and private assets or resources are depleted, and physical social infrastructures, human capital, economy, security, and labour are destroyed or wasted. It disrupts or interrupts trade and economic relations internationally. It encourages devaluation of currency and gives room for hyper inflation. The public, private, humanitarian agencies, domestic and foreign entrepreneur, or investments, are reduced to nothing. The possibilities of better economic growth are threatened or frightened because of international trade barriers and itches. Arms and ammunitions get proliferated and constitute insecurity globally. Financial capabilities meant for the long-term economy plans, agricultural processes, and developmental programmes are mostly diverted on relief materials and post-conflict reconstruction activities after the war. No reasonable food production would be undertaken during the war. The goods and services are destroyed.

(8.) Ecological Destruction

This is a situation whereby the physical and biological components of environment are negatively affected by the war. The war adverse effect on environment is destructive in terms of destruction of organisms, vegetations, human, animals, agricultural products (crops and livestock), farmland, etc. The forest and other ecological components are always indiscriminate experience disturbances in their natural existence due to war impacts.

The wars have adverse effects on the livings and growths of ecosystems. The war engenders famine, drought, and starvation in the areas it was being carried out. War activities destroyed forests and their rich natural resources in both living and non-living organisms through the world. During the war, the farmers are hardly go to farms or abandoned their agricultural activities for either safety or war prosecution. Hence, there is always being shortage of food security immediately after the war (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(9.) Disintegration of Global Political System

The armed conflicts or wars destroy socio-political relationships of international community where issues that bother on international challenges such as insecurity, emergence of diseases or virus, terrorism, environmental disasters, etc. are discussed and addressed. It as well eliminates international elements or leaders sectary of the United Nations in the past that had charismatic to carry nations along on peace, security, and development matters. The wars are always sowing the seeds of discontented, bitterness and divisions among the member states. The wars transpose mutual understanding to un-favourable situations among the nations. The consequences are always proliferated inequalities among the nations and make social elements vulnerable to the insecurity situations along the line. Its attributes such as repression, terrorism, genocide, and insurgency destroy international peaceful co-existence. The effects of war demand disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, reintegration, resettlement, re-unification of family, reconstruction, etc. Mass displacement of persons and refugee problems are parts of the effects of the wars or armed conflicts. Wars erode international orders, relationships, and multilateral relationships viability (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(10.) Dysfunctional of Global Health System

The adverse effects of armed conflict on health system of the global village and conditions of living organisms cannot be underestimated in terms of dilapidated or destruction of health facilities or wastage of human lives, spreading of diseases, virus, ordeal of refugees and internally displaced persons, and destructions of ecosystem. The vulnerable groups indulge in different kinds of things to survive and as well directly or indirectly spread diseases, HIV virus, and Aids. Hygienic or potable water, drugs, food, and other health basic necessities are lacking and contributed to general illness of victims or belligerents in the affected areas by war. The water treatment plants are willfully destroyed and left belligerents without potable water and critical conditions. The resources that are meant for better health care programmes invariably diverted to war prosecutions, acquisitions of war equipments or peace missions (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

In war situations, explosion of bombs and its effects spread environmental hazard across the land to the extent that many people would be deformed, amputated; female genders are raped or effected viruses and experience genital mutilations. The impact of war on human psychic is at the level of reasoning -in terms of trauma, most especially, the children, females, aged people, disabilities, and ex-combatants. The displaced persons' ordeals are usually having grave consequences on human social interaction and nature. The vulnerable groups are mostly bearing the brunt of the psychological effects of war. The war situation is always militarized the socio-institutionalised structures and imposed burdens on the victims. It as well impairs physical and mental problems that fuel violent acts everywhere (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(11.) Disorientation and Dis-aspiration of Development

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) the war and armed conflict consequences on development activities are bi-facials in nature, which could be positive or negative. The positive aspect of armed conflict is in post-conflict relationships or situations where the lessons must have learnt from the past experiences. That is, a conflicting situation may help to build mutual understanding and better relationship in post-war era sometimes, just as it is inherent in the recent Rwandan socio-political situation after the war. Burton (1987:137-138) states that "conflict like sex is an essential creative element in human relationship. It is a means of change and articulating social values, welfare, security, justice, and opportunities for development. Indeed... conflict like sex is meant to be enjoyed. It sometimes inspires innovative ideas and developmental competitiveness. It is a mechanism or paradigm of ensuring justice and protection of rights, if it is constructively carried out. On the other hand, conflict can be destructive. Momah (1991:59) state that "armed conflict in its totality is evil... It destroys or ruins, maims, changes boundaries, topples government of the people, brutalises human psyche or wrecks precious family togetherness, and most often, regrettably sows the seed of discords". It disaggregates development orientation and aspiration. In other words, war can be destructive or caused disunity/distrust among the social elements. It can also brew better and mutual understanding between or among the conflicting parties in the end. Conflict is natural. No baby was born without a man and woman engages in conflict.

(12.) Violence against Vulnerable Groups

This impact identifies violence as one of the major challenges facing vulnerable in societies. For example, the vulnerable groups are mostly abandoned by the heads of their family and make them liable to different circumstances such as mal-nutrition, mal-treatment, trafficking and force labours, especially, in the developing nations. The violence suffered during the war by vulnerable groups are always retained in their psychics and manifested in their physical appearance.

They exchange their rights and values for basic needs to survive. The abandoned spouses and ladies are usually ended up in prostitution or engage sexual exploitation and harassment. In most cases, they have no opportunity to attain basic education that can improve their knowledge, and good health service that can better their conditions is lacking. Their means of education remain social interactions or relations with the neighbours. Some of them become miscreants along the line. During the wars, the female gender attends to the sick, wounded persons, buried the dead, and participated in some initiatives that brought about peace. Their experience tells the untold suffering conditions of the female gender passing through in the war situations, where they participate in dual capacities as victims and actors that fend for the families and society. They helped to maintain social fabric system and replaced some destroyed social services. They are primes advocate of peace, and as well suffered in the war situations (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(13.) War and Society

Since society encompasses different categories of people, the assemblages of frustrated members of society are directly or indirectly brewed insecurity into the societies if nothing tangible is not done for during and after the war for them. In other words, society is the receiving end of its violence effects. The way a society is structured determines what would be obtainable, in terms of functionalities, peace, security, cultural traits, development, and socio-political practices. The reflections or mirror effects of war on international social system are violence. In other words, the families or homes are the smallest social components of society. Most of the wayward members of society are the tools in the hands of miscreant leaders or religious fundamentalists, in terms of exercising of violence. To build society back after the war required the programmes like disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, reintegration, reunification of family, reconstruction, etc. (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

(14.) Distortion of Socio-cultural System

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) war destroys socio-cultural fabric system or coping mechanisms of any society. The belligerents suffer the effects of war mostly once their social norms and values are collapsed and cannot be functioned well in post-war era. They live endangered life, and returning back to their normal ways of life after the war is difficult. The armed conflict destroys their family kinships and relationships, and many that have been separated for long term may have imbibed different world views, attitudes, or characters that culminated into changes in reactions. It exacerbates divisions among the individuals and social institutions.

It increases intra or inter-groups insecurity, hostility, discord and disrupt relationship. It prevents people from meeting their basic needs through a communalism. Most especially, the vulnerable groups bear the brunt of most armed conflicts. The armed conflict imposes special or huge burdens on female gender, children, aged ones, and disabilities. Sometime, little children and women are forcefully drafted into horrible soldiering activities during the war. Numbers of orphans and homeless children are multiplied during the war. War impairs physical and mental disorders on people, and brews violent culture everywhere in societies. The cases of deformity, amputation, rapes, armed robbery, kidnapping, spread of viral diseases, prostitution, homeless, psychological disorder, huge unemployment, etc. have effects on society. The attitudes and characters of youth in war areas are hardly worthy of emulation in terms of laziness, looting, engagement in thieve or armed robberies, miscreants, prostitution, etc. The war situation always mold or mortgage their consciences for atrocities. Many of them lose interest in educational virtues and values. They hardly delight in thorough academic exercises and involve in academic fraud, deviance, and laziness that encouraged examination malpractices and cultism. Reading culture within such society is found wanting. Their educational facilities suffered immensely during the war. School buildings and facilities are willfully destroyed or turn to non-state actors training camps. Large numbers of school age children are out of schools. In the post-war, much effort is needed to provide necessary school materials and infrastructural facilities (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2 Post- War/Conflict Peacebuilding Programmes

The concept of peacebuilding emerged in the international lexicon in 1992 when the then United Nations Secretary General Boutros – Ghali defined it in his Agenda for Peace as post-conflict action identifies as support structures that tend to strengthen and solidify peace and avoid a relapse of conflict. Since then, peacebuilding has become a catchall concept encompassing multiple perspectives and agenda. It is indiscriminately referred to as preventive measure of conflict, conflict resolution, or post-conflict reconstruction. An Agenda for peace supplement of 1995 noted the linkages between conflict prevention and peacebuilding, that is, demilitarization, control of small arms, institutional reform, improved police and judicial systems, monitoring of human rights, electoral reform and social and economic development as valuable prevention of conflict and healing the wounds after the conflict.

Stages of Peacebuilding and Reconstruction

Cessation of Hostilities: This consists of ceasefire between the conflicting/war stakeholders followed by peace agreement, separation of forces and ending of hostilities/war.

(1.) The Disarmament, Demobilisation, Re-integration, Rehabilitation, Reconstruction, Re-settlement, Reconciliation, and Reunification

There is need for proper disarmament, demobilization, reintegration, rehabilitation, reconstruction, re-settlement, reconciliation, reunification, etc. of all the displaced populations, sacked communities, and ex-combatants in post-war to reduce the effects of war. Unfortunately, these are hardly carried out properly in many post-war situations and usually snowball to severe adverse effects of war. Those that are yet to be reintegrated outnumber those who have been reintegrated. Every post-war situation must take cognizance of this (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

2. Rule of Law and Justice

The rule of law and justice in post-war era entrenches social equity and fairness. Every victim of the war deserves justice and equal participations in rebuilding their society back. The post-conflict judicial system needs to be strengthened and re-structured in such that justice and rule of law prevail. The violators of law and order during the war need to be prosecuted, and the law of the land should be supreme. Everybody should be equal before the law and facilitating peaceful co-existence for effects of war to be properly managed (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3. Early Warning Signal and Preventive Diplomacy Mechanism

This should be incorporated into the war impacts management and post-war peacebuilding. The analysis of the early warning signals provides an insight for any emerging conflict. An effective early warning system combines historical/socio-political information situations in society to forecast the dynamics of any developing conflict that can lead to war. It is an effective mechanism that addresses traces of crises. It serves as preventive diplomacy that tempers perceived war factors. It helps in making decision on peace generating factors or initiatives. It is an overall process of addressing the perceived emergence of conflicts. It encompasses activities that prevent conflict from escalating into war. Its activities include confidence-building, trust, fact finding, prevention, etc. (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

4. Transparency and General Accountability

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020)... for sustainable peace to be on course there is need for transparency and general accountability of the people's activities. This mechanism should not be lacking in post-war activities. If this is not taken cognizance, it can make a war and post-war situations protracted in nature.

The assets of political appointees and stakeholders even in the crises situations need to be made known while in the office. The income and expenditure of the societal activities should be monitored, verified, and also presented on timely bases through a conduct bureau. There should be post-war impact assessment that can signify both positive and negative impacts of war and manage them successfully.

5. Human Security and Infrastructural Facilities

In post-war peacebuilding activities, the emphasis of the society affected by war should be on provision for social/human security and infrastructural facilities, and not solely on traditional security. This is because the concept of security has beyond a fundamental military activity that aims at protecting territorial boundaries and nation's sovereignty today. Social/Human security encompasses the protection of lives and property, which is a pre-condition for people's improvement, protection of human rights and provision for basic human needs. It guarantees absence of fear, threat, anxiety, tension, and the apprehension of losing life, liberty, property, goals, values, and so on. Human security is very essential to any post-war situation and sustainable development processes, particularly, in the less developed nations. It is highly needed in post-war era in order to reduce or manage the effects of war properly (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

6. System Improvement

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) the socio-political system destroyed by the war in the post-conflict era needs to be rebuilt, overhauled, and transformed. This is because its agencies require commitment, efficiency, and effectiveness for a peaceful co-existence. The post-war activities should be devoid of ethnic agitation, sentiment, segregation, oppression, classism, tribalism, nepotism, and sectionalism. There should be better orientation programmes that see political offices as service to humanity and not opportunity to acquire wealth at expense of masses. There should be no room for self-seeking or selfishness in governance. The socio-economic and political systems should be reformed, and all the factors that led to the crises initially need to be trashed-out and managed amicably. There should be total transformation in governance for the effects of the war to be managed properly.

7. Commitment and Efficiency

The post-war stakeholders or leadership in governance and communities need to be more committed and efficient in all their activities, if the aim and objectives of post-war peacebuilding will be achieved. There is need for leaders that are sensitive and mindful of their citizens' desires. The interests of the leaders should not be on what to make or gain from the system than how they would improve their system. This is because series of allegations of corrupt practices against the top government officers in many post-war situations are always abound. To manage the effects of war properly in post-war era, there is need for rebuilding of the society and nation collectively (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

8. Gender Sensitivity and Women Empowerment

In post-war era, there is need for gender sensitivity and women empowerment. Women should not be less educated, and have less access to good productive resources. Or occupy few decision making positions compare to their male counterparts. This is because the war is always brought about the untold suffering conditions of the female genders where they participated as victims and actors, fending for themselves and their families. All the development partners must ensure policies that are responsive for women's needs for them to participate in traditional and non-traditional activities (Omeje, 2009:116). The problems of female genders need to be addressed in post-war situation. Empowering female genders is essential to human development objectives such as poverty-reduction. The post-war political body and its partners need to invest in confidence-building, knowledge acquisition, and self-esteem of girls, and provide viable alternatives economic survival. The exploitations of women and girls need to be prevented or managed properly in post-war (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

9. Good Governance

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) ... in post-war era, good governance is necessary because the essence of governance is to guarantee a congenial environment where the aspirations and lawful activities can be carried out freely without intimidation or harassment so as to achieve stability and development. It is a pragmatic channel for attainment of sustainable peace and tranquility. Diamond (2004:222) good governance is the ability or willingness to apply public resources effectively to generate public good and benefit to the entire community. This includes physical structure in terms of roads, bridges, ports, sanitation, potable water, electric power, and telecommunication. Others are public transport, socio-economic, and political infrastructures that ensure schools, clinics, markets, courts, vaccination programme, and improved agricultural techniques, neutral and capable state bureaucracy.

All these require dedicated and charismatic leaders, transparency, and accountability, rule of law, public participatory and dialogue in policy formulation and implementation in post-war era for effects of war to be managed properly.

10. True Democratic System

Every post-war society needs to entrench a true democratic system such as representative/liberal democracy, where quality service delivery, accountability, transparency, rule of law, system improvement, and good governance are guaranteed or be its watchdog for its aim and objectives on peacebuilding and management of effects of the war to be achieved. Bruce (1993:5-11) democratic culture affects the way in which the leaders manage their conflicts by following the law rather than the group leaders, and tolerating the differences among individuals. The liberal leaders face institutionalised constraints that impede their capacity to mobilise state's resources for war without the consent of the broad spectrum of interests. The credibility of the liberal states allows them to negotiate for sustainable peace. The participation of the public in open debates sends clear and reliable information regarding the intentions of the state. But in non-democratic society, there would be mistrust and unwillingness to make concessions that prevent war (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Military Reorganization: This entails disarmament, de-mining, demobilization, rehabilitation, reintegration of ex-combatants and creation of new and unified armed forces.

Reconciliation and Justice: Research studies and action programmes on post-conflict peacebuilding emphasize the need to anchor the peace process on conception of justice as one of the prerequisites for sustaining post-conflict stability and democratic consolidation. In order to achieve this goal, reform of judiciary system, building of new structure of national police and strengthening of both the path-ways to enforce the rule of law and justice.

Political Transition Programme: It comprises formation and registration of political parties, conduct of elections, formation of government of national unity, re-establishment of basic organs of state power, democratization of structures of rules and programmes of reconciliation between former warring parties and establishment of power sharing structures that accommodates rival factions and interests.

Reconstruction and Renovation of Infrastructures or Social Amenities: Rebuilding of damaged, abandoned, and decapitated structures and facilities such as government buildings, schools, health centers, roads, bridges, electricity, pipe-borne water and host of other should be given urgent and adequate attention to alleviate and better the generality of the populace.

Socio and Economic Reconstruction: These are various forms of activities geared towards repairing, renovating and reconstructing the physical and psycho-social damage of war, resuscitation of national infrastructures such as schools, roads, hospitals, electricity, pipe-borne water and other properties belonging to the government that are meant for socio-economic well being of the citizens, and programmes for economic recovery, reform and growth as well as social development.

4.0 CONCLUSION

The incessant either intra-state, intra-states and international conflicts or wars in different parts of the world, most especially, in Africa, breakdown the peace or relapses of many number of wars among the countries calls effective management of war effects and post-conflict peacebuilding in every post-war activity. This must not be treated in isolation, because, the ripple effects of war's spill-over are always across the global village. Hence, the effects of wars require a collective effort and must be jointly treated to prevent further proliferation.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, the impacts of wars or armed conflicts and the management of its adverse effects on belligerents in the international community were discussed. Various approaches required to effectively prevent the relapses or reoccurrence of wars and sustainable post-conflict peacebuilding activities such as disarmament, demobilization, rehabilitation, reintegration, transformation, reconciliation, and reconstruction were also elicited for students better understanding.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Identify challenges confronting post – conflict peacebuilding and suggest the way forward.
2. Of what importance are peacebuilding activities to post – conflict environment?

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. 2020. *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. Second Edition, Pp 1-560.
- Addison, Tony. (2003). *From Conflict to Recovery in Africa* New York: Oxford University Press.
- An Agenda for Peace: (17June1992) Preventive Diplomacy, Peacemaking and Peacekeeping (Report of the Secretary General pursuant to the statement adopted by the Summit Meeting of the Secretary Council on 31 January 1992), UN DocA/47/277–5/2411(availableat) <<http://www.un.org/Dos/sa/agpeace>
- Bracken,P. (2002) *Trauma, Culture, Meaning and Philosophy*. London. Whurr Publishers.
- Chr. Michelson Institute. (2000) "After War: Reconciliation and Democratization in Divided Societies – Lessons Learned," Summary Report (Bergen: Chr. Michelson Institute).
- Date–Bah, Engenia. (2003) *Jobs after War: A Critical Challenge in the Peace and Reconstruction Puzzle* (Geneva: ILO).
- Dupuy, T.N. (1992). *Understanding War: History and Theory of Combat*. London. Leo Cooper.
- Fen Osler Hampson. (1996). *Nuturing Peace: Why Peace Settlements Succeed or Fail*, Washington, D.C. Institute of Peace Press.
- Ingleby D. (1989). Critical Psychology in relation to Political Repression and violence. *Int J Mental Health*.
- Last,M. (2000). *Healing the Social Wounds of war*. Med Confl Survival.
- Mark, Chingono. (1996).*The State, Violence and Development: The Political Economy of War in Mozambique, 1975 – 92*, Acdershot: Averbury.

MODULE 4 MANAGEMENT OF CONFLICT AND WAR RESOLUTION

CONTENTS

- Unit 1 Conventional Conflict Handling Style/ African Traditional Method of Conflict Management
- Unit 2 Alternative to Dispute Resolution
- Unit 3 Conflict and War Intervention
- Unit 4 Multi-tracks Diplomacy in Peacebuilding
- Unit 5 Peace and Development

UNIT 1 CONVENTIONAL CONFLICT HANDLING STYLE/ AFRICAN TRADITIONAL METHOD OF CONFLICT MANAGEMENT

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Conventional Conflict Handling Style
 - 3.2 African Traditional Method of Conflict Management
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The conventional conflict handling style and African traditional method of conflict management are the focuses of this unit. The unknown ways many people handled the conflict and the outcome are discussed for students understanding. The African institutional systems of conflict management before colonial interruptions are as well elicited for students to understand the ways of Africans in the immemorial.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, the students should be able to:

- identify conflict handling style and discuss it
- enumerate African traditional method of conflict management

3.0 MAIN CONTENTS

3.1 Conflict Handling Styles

There are various forms or ways by which individual, groups, societies or nations perceive and respond to conflicts arising from diverse/conflicting views, opinion, ideas and values/ belief. The behaviours and attitudes of the parties involved determine the outcome of any conflict whether it would be a success and failure. The approach can be described in two basic dimensions. Namely: assertiveness and cooperativeness, which are discussed below.

a. Assertiveness

This describes the extent at which individual attempts to satisfy his/her needs and concern.

b. Cooperativeness

This explains the extent at which a person attempts to satisfy his needs and as well concerns for the other person's needs. It manifests itself in two basic dimensions of behaviours that define, apply, or explain five conflict handling styles in terms of domination/competition, accommodation, avoidance, collaborating and compromising.

i. Dominating/Competing

This takes place when an individual is very assertive and not cooperative. Such a person pursues his/her own concerns at the expense of other person. It is a power-oriented mode. It is a position of I must win, I have to stand for myself or my rights. It entails defending a position by argument, rank, or economic advantage. It is win/lose situation.

ii. Accommodating

It is a situation of unassertive and cooperation. It is the opposite of competition. When accommodating, you neglect everything concerns you to satisfy the concerns of the other person. It is an element of self-sacrifice in the conflict handling style. It is an act of being selfless, generous, or being of weak or having low self-esteem.

iii. Avoiding

This is when one is unassertive and uncooperative. One will not (immediately) pursue his/her own concerns or those of other persons. One will fail to address the conflict, of being diplomatic in handling conflict, or postponing issue for another time. It could also be a situation of withdrawal that worsens relationship.

iv. Collaborating

This is a situation whereby one is both assertive and cooperative, which is the opposite of avoidances. One would be working with the other person to find a solution that satisfies both concerned parties. It is a dialogue means, an act of good listening, understanding and other person's needs, concerns and creation of solutions to meet their concerns, which is win/win outcome.

V. Compromising

This is when you are partially assertive and cooperative. When you compromise you are attempting to find expedient mutual acceptable solutions that are partially satisfied both the parties. When you compromise, you share the differences and make concessions. That is, you give up something to gain something in return. You seek middle ground position. You win little and lose little.

3.1.2 Conventional Conflict Handling Style

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) ... since conflict is a common phenomenon that occurs due to inability of the parties involved to manage their incompatible goals and values constructively, the actions or responses to address the menace are discussed below. In other words, the behaviours or attitudes of the conflicting parties which may be assertive, cooperative, competitive, dominating, accommodating, collaborating, compromising, avoidance, etc. are considered. The ability of the interveners or conflicting parties to manage pressure or tension is sometimes determined the outcomes. Hitherto, the following conventional conflict handling styles which are avoidance/denial, confrontation, fighting, joint problem solving, and third party intervention are discussed here:

1. Avoidance/Denial Strategy

This is a strategy where the parties involved in a conflict are avoiding one another or each other and their conflicting issues as much as possible, or pretend as if nothing is happening... Ross (2001) states that "if the disadvantaged groups or individuals refused to consider an open conflict, then, they deny themselves of what is sometimes seen as most effective means of bringing about their needed changes". In other words, wrong chooses or uses of conflict handling styles can make conflicting parties feel more hurt, frustrated, annoyed or angry and resentful if their care is not taken. Avoidance strategy is a scenario of "sweeping" a conflicting matter under the "carpet", which may gradually graduate into an open or larger conflict.

This strategy gives room for win/lose or lose/lose outcome in conflict management, that is, the gain of one party is the loss of another party. Or better still; one party would gain at the expense of another party. Avoidance/denial strategy is usually ended up in destruction of lives and properties. It is not the best strategy in managing conflict, this is because; it always keeps-on reducing relationship or worsening conflict situation and producing negative end results. However, it can serve as initial conflict management strategy sometimes. Or better still, serves as a rethinking or reflecting condition about what next step should be taken in conflict management (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

2. Confrontation/Fighting Style

This is a destructive strategy that keeps-on reducing the carrying capacity of a system, society, parties, or persons involved in a conflict. It is a negative pressure applied strategy, or an unlawful force application scenario against one another in a conflict situation. It involves threatening, pushing, pulling, hitting, yelling, ventilating, bullying, hurting, insulting or tenaciously holding onto perceived conflicting issue or disagreement; which usually lead to violence or create lose/lose outcome if the care of the conflicting parties is not taken. The parties involved in a conflict would end up losing their energy and properties, and neither of them would get their wants or needs. Sometimes, the strategy ends up in win/lose outcome, that is, the stronger or mightier ones would win while the weaker are losing, although, this does not occur at all times. The strategy is called zero-sum game where winner takes all. In some cases, confrontation might also lead to win/lose where the stronger party with bigger power wins while the weaker party ends up being the loser (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3. Third Party Intervention Strategy

This is a medium where the mediator, facilitator, re-conciliator, or arbitrator intervenes into a conflict situation between or among the conflicting parties. The mediators, facilitators, re-conciliators, or arbitrators may have been called or developed interest in helping the conflicting parties to find lasting solutions to their problem. It usually produces good or positive ends result like win/win outcomes provided it was not manipulated. That is, it could be manipulated if the care is not taken and produced win/lose outcome. The conflict interveners must be trusted by the parties involved, but once their confidence or trust in the mediators, facilitators, re-conciliators, or arbitrators is lost. The best option for their interveners is to withdraw or stop intervening into their conflict matter and call it quit. Dialogue or negotiation strategies are the tools required in third parties intervention.

The parties involved in a conflict must also be ready to surrender their conflict matters to their interveners and cooperate with them on peace process (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

4. Joint Problem Solving Strategy

This is a strategy where the parties involved in a conflict would realise their mistakes or problems and be ready to manage, fine-tune or fashion a way out for their social problems through dialogue and negotiation. The parties involved will be ready to listen to each other or one another with the intent of having mutual understanding, benefits and remove their underlying causes of conflict and develop a way out or fashioning-out and fine-tune amicable ways of managing their conflict situation successfully. Conflicting parties that adopt this strategy would have mutual respects and mutual understanding for their differences and cooperate. It is a strategy of no winner and no vanquished in conflict intervention and management. That is, no one is wrong or right, or better still, no one would be gaining while others are losing. This strategy seeks for mutual understanding, benefit, and collaborative efforts in managing a conflict situation positively. It gives room for win/win outcomes. That is, a situation where the parties involved in a conflict would be satisfied. They are satisfied because their needs are met and their strain relationships have been restored back to normal. Neither the party would get all what he/she needs (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2 African Traditional Method of Conflict Management

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) prior to the western civilisation in Africa, African continent had been endowed with social institutions that ensure peaceful co-existence and maintain social orders across its land. The African ways of maintaining the peace began from individuals to their households. The underlying principle was that the individual that is freed of the inner and domestic conflict is not only to behave in a less aggressive manner but also relates well with his/her neighbours and larger community (Oguntomisin, 2004). This consequently means African communities in the pre-colonial era have their conventions that guide individual behaviours in mitigating or preventing intra-personal, inter-personal, domestic and community conflicts, which are different from the western models of dispute management.

Harunah (2003:5) indeed, from... oral sources, and.... some existing written accounts, it was clear that all African indigenous cultures, customs, traditions and civilisations emphasised not only the value and significant transformation, but necessitate peaceful co-existence and harmony among the various groups living in a community and their neighbours. In African society, premium was placed on peace.

The essence of ensuring peaceful co-existence in pre-colonial Africa stems from the realisation of negative consequences of conflict situation and allied adversity that follow demise of peace. Whenever there is crisis or conflict in pre-colonial era, restoration of peace is a general concern of everybody through a voluntary mediation or arbitration by people, communities, etc. derives from indigenous concept and practice of being a brother's keeper and general concern for social harmony. In a typical African society, each person, family head, community chief and elders, kingdom leaders, etc. were held responsible for the maintenance of peace. Any breach of peace was punished through ritual, deities, norms and moral sanctions (public disgrace). The strategies of exogamous marriages, blood covenants, etc. were used to established peace and prevent crisis (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Nwolise (2005: 154) each people, race, or identity group has or have their own ways of doing things, especially, as it concerns social transformation and cohesion. For example, in the western society, police is the agency of crime detection while the traditional African societies rely on oath-taking and divination. The western world emphasises commission of inquiries, constitution and court system presiding over by lawyers and judges. But Africans use council of elders, king's court, people's open-assemblies, etc. for dispute management and justice dispensation. They use citizen diplomacy, marriages, jokes, oaths, symbolic diplomacy, blood feuding, etc. Onoge (1993:23) states that before the arrival of colonial forces, social crises were monitored, prevented, managed and resolved through established mechanisms such as traditional rulers, council of elders, age-sets, chief, ancestral cults, religious beliefs, local deities, and others. Individuals or group's attitudes and behaviours were controlled by mechanisms. That is, before the advent of slave trade and colonialism, the Africans had their peculiar methods of monitoring, preventing, managing and resolving their social problems. They make peace, keep peace and build peace in their social system.

Broadly speaking, the African peace tradition mechanisms are categorised into two social formations, which are central authority and segmentary authority (egalitarian political system). The centralised authority comprises paramount rulers like kings, chiefs, elders, compound heads, street heads and family heads. While the segmentary authority comprises age-grade or mate, marriage alliance, payment of tributes, inheritance, clubs, rituals, ancestral, cults, deities, market association, political diplomatic relations, etc. (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

1. Centralised Authority

Under the central authority, a man who is the head of the family is expected to be at peace with his household and himself by ensuring or making sure that his household members are relating well with the members of his compounds or wards. The compounds or wards' head as well as village head or king have similar responsibilities in their respective domains. They guarded their communities through cultural norms, values and customs by applying appropriate sanctions against any breaches. This is because the breach of their conventions was regarded as "crime", disturbance of individuals and communal equilibria. Imposition of sanctions on individual or group of deviants was a justifiable means of restoring pre-existing balance in societies and traditional device for crime prevention or deterrence of deviant behaviour (Oguntomisin, 2004:1-2). There are three types of identifiable sanctions, especially, in the traditional West Africa. They are moral, legal and ritual sanctions. A moral sanction was imposed on actions contrary to their conventions and set-values in society, which consequently lead to social disorder.

Authority such as compound head, ward chief, priest or king expresses such sanctions verbally in consonant with severe punishment. Moral sanctions were expressed in mass action. Their sanction emphasises punishments ranging from public disgrace to ostracism. Legal process recommends miscreants to be disciplined after found guilty, which involves the use of ruler's security apparatus recognises as authority of law enforcement. Paramount-rulers like kings and council of chiefs made the law in order to ensure peaceful co-existence and maintaining social order in their domains. The ritual sanctions were rooted in their religions, which were seeing as "engine of social law". In the societies where the kings have divine authority, "*Ipsa facto the pointi fix maximus* were imposed ritual sanctions. The African gods or goddesses are believed to be naturally averse to immorality behaviour or other forms of injustice. Their various forms of sanctions create fear in people and minimise attempts of anti-social activities or engagements that led to public disorder or create atmosphere for political instability and violence, inter-community or inter-groups acrimony (Oguntomisin, 2004: 3-4 and Brown, 1951:261-277).

3. Segmentary Authority: Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) another mechanism of peace and social order maintenance in African societies includes use of age-grades or mates, marriage alliance, payment of tributes, inheritance, clubs and associations, rituals, ancestral cults, deities, market women association, political emissaries and diplomatic missions, blood covenants, etc. They enhance stability, peaceful co-existence, and maintenance of social orders.

Thus, voluntary peace mediations and arbitrations motivate concepts or practices of brotherliness/brotherhood or brother keeper in society. Peace education was practiced right from homes to a larger society. Children were educated through parent, neighbour, community members, etc. Alagoa (1998:3) the principles and values guiding social stability include impartiality, fairness accommodation, reciprocity, moderation, compromise, and genuine reconciliation, such principles of accommodation, compromise and genuine reconciliation, which oppose principle of winner takes all of the western model. Winner takes all does no one good. It dispossesses spirit of tolerance. In other words, African societies were willingly wished to live together.

According to Ikwere proverb, “when other people’s goats graze with their goats, their desire spirit of accommodation is related to the love among people, and for where there is no love, the skin of an antelope is not big enough for the two to sit”. Oba Adeyemi III (2004:1) on his own world of view states that “it is my firmed belief that long before Aristotle propounded his theory on sociology and metaphysics, African race, particularly, the Yoruba, have not only understood these theories but had reduced them to practice. These are embedded in their various proverbs, parables, and wise saying. That is, Yoruba then established mechanisms for social dysfunctional prevention, management, and transformation. They make determinable efforts to maintain and ensure social harmony between individuals and groups in their social enclaves”. Ancient Oyo or Yoruba were very virtuous, loving, and kind. Theft and fornication were rare in spite of scantiness, or often times, nearly complete absence of clothing to which they were accustomed... Yorubas as a whole are socially polite and proverbially hospitable. Licentiousness is abhorred. There were attested cases where a member of family would be condemned to slavery by a unanimous vote of all the relatives when he/she has brought disgrace to the family (Samuel, 1996).

In the same vein, Imoagene (1976) states that irrespective of a person’s qualifications, he/she could not be appointed to a kingly title in the society (i.e. chiefs) if he/she (i.e., Kinship) was not a member of the privileged group. Within the restricted circle of eligible candidates, intelligence, moral fitness, open-mindedness, etc. which candidates had to possess; the virtue, honesty and integrity were not only preserved in the olden days, they were transcended in ethnic groups. Paden (1986) said this on Hausa system too “...a summary of the early caliphate values regarding community and authority include community consists of good Muslims with provisions for fair treatment to the non-Muslim minorities, ensure of justice and follow of Qur’an Sunni.

The leadership was vested in someone who has quality of honesty, learning, courage, humility... and who is respected for his learning. The succession of leadership was decided by the councils of learned people, who would hopefully choose the most qualified person (regardless of dynastic linkage). The leaders served as examples to their people in terms of actions as well as words. They were personally responsible to gods for their actions. Similarly, the Igbo people of the good old days were not different from Yoruba and Hausa/Fulani.

Olisa (2002) the Igbo values of life consist of material ends such as children, wealth, health, etc., as well as non-material ends such as harmony with gods and with their fellow men. Igbo accepted without question the participation of gods and ancestors in the affairs of men. In malevolence when offered by men, and benevolence when appeased or pleased. Most of the political roles or rituals were expected to maintain a constant good relationship between the community and supernatural powers that hold decisive influence, for good or bad over vital things of life –crops, health, productivity, and fortune. That is, performers of political rules were not expected to gain materially in an appreciable measure from their functions. Political offices are not materially lucrative in Igbo traditional society, nor did confer exceptional social privileges on the holders, except the influence he or she wielded as representative of gods and ancestors.

That was why; one of the norms is expected of the office holders' absolute ritual purity and political integrity. No one who had found guilty of grave abomination can hold public office, the same applicable to reprobate of other criminal acts. In other words, they were educated right from homes. Their communal ways of life ensure stability of social system. Cultural mechanisms of social stability and transformation include joint task projects. Their instruments were unity of purpose, honest, trust, proverbs, idioms, axioms, maxims, tributes, oath, taboos, jokes, inheritance, festivals, etc. Alternative to dispute resolution mechanisms were operated at individuals and community levels (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

4.0 CONCLUSION

The people with wrong perceptions or negative connotations handled their conflict situation destructively; meanwhile, having positive approaches toward a conflicting situation help to manage conflict positively. It brews friendship, good interactive behaviour, mutual understanding, better relationship building, love, peace, positive change, progress, improvement, and development. Moreover, the differences in human nature make their conflicting nature inevitable or a pure re-current fact of life.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, inability of people to manage their conflict scenario positively or constructively makes their conflict violent in nature. In other words, the parties involved in a conflict and their interveners must understand conflicting issues and rudiments before they can develop proper managerial approaches toward it. They must have open mind-set toward their conflicting situations for it to serve as an opportunity for positive social changes, articulation of purpose, development and beneficial. Necessary measures of conflict prevention and management are required and have been discussed for further efforts and initiatives of the students in the unit.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. What is the Conflict Handling Style?
2. Discuss the African Traditional Methods of Conflict Management,

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. 2020. *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. Second Edition, Pp 1-560.
- Alagoa, J.E. 1998. "Conflict Management: Traditional Models from Pre-colonial Times to the Present in the South-South Geo-Political Zone. Centre for Peace and Research and Conflict Resolution, National War College, Abuja. Pp3.
- Albert, I. O. (2001). *Introduction to Third-party Intervention in Community Conflict Peaceful Transformations Forum*: In Association with John Archers (Publisher) Limited Dugbe, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Albert, I. O. (2003). *Mainstreaming: Positive Leadership in Conflict Transformation in Nigeria*. Centre for Social Science Research and Development, 87B and C, T. O. S. Benson Estate, Ikorodu, Lagos, Nigeria
- Best, G. S. (2004). "The Methods of Conflict Resolution and Transformation". In Best, G. S. (2004) *Introduction to Peace and Conflict Studies in West Africa*: University for Peace; Spectrum Books Limited Ibadan.
- Dokun, O. P. (2005). *Conflict and Context of Conflict Resolution* Obafemi Awolowo University Press Ile-Ife, Nigeria Pp. 113-114
- Folger, J. P. (1997). *Working through conflict* Strategies for Relationships: New York.
- Harunah, H., Nwolise, O.B.C. and Oluyemi-Kusa, D. 2003. *A Guide to Peace Education and Peace Promotion Strategies in Africa*, Africa Refugee Foundation. Pp17.

- Ihejirika, S. et al. (2002). "Conflict management Training Manual": Conflict Resolution Stakeholders Network (CRESNET) with USAID/OT Support.
- Imoagene, S.O. 1976. *Social Mobility in Emergent Society*. Department of Demography, the Australian National University and Sociology Department, University of Ibadan, Ibadan.
- Laue, J. H. (1992). "Conflict Resolution United States: Institute of peace Journal", Vol. 5, No. 5 October p. 4
- Lund, M. S. (1997). Preventing Violent Conflict: A Revised Guide for Practitioners. Washington D. C. Creative Associates International
- Moregenthau, H.J. (1966). *Politics among Nations: The Struggle for Power and Peace*, New York.
- Oba Adeyemi, L. 2004. "Conflict Resolution in the Ways of Our Ancestors". A Paper Delivered to the Intellectual Community of the Institute of African Studies, University of University of Ibadan. Pp1.
- Oguntomisin, G. O. (2004). *The Purpose of Peacekeeping and Peacemaking in Pre- colonial Nigeria*. John Archers (publisher) Limited, Dugbe, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Olisa, M.S.O. (2002). "Igbo Traditional Scio-Political System". In Ofomata, G.E.K. (eds.) 2002. A Survey of the Igbo Nation, Africana First Publishers Limited, Onitsha.
- Onoge, O. 1982. "Corruption and the Nigerian social System: Notes for Materialist Ethnography". In Odekunle, F (eds.) Nigeria: Corruption in Development. Ibadan: Ibadan University Press. Pp23.
- Paden, J. N. 1986. *Values and Leadership in Nigeria, Ahmadu Bello Sardauna of Sokoto*. Hudahuda Publishing Company, Zaria.
- Schmid, A. P. (1998). *Thesaurus and Glossary of Early Warning and Conflict Prevention Terms* Erasmus University: Synthesis Foundation.

UNIT 2 ALTERNATIVE TO DISPUTE RESOLUTION

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Alternative to Dispute Resolution
 - 3.4 Judicial Settlement
 - 3.5 Regional Agencies Arrangement
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

In this unit, other means of peaceful management of conflicts recognise by international law as stipulated in the Article 33 of the UN Charter that laid considerable emphasis on the obligation of member states to prevent or manage conflict through peaceful means are discussed. It should also be noted that the means suggested the lawful ways of managing conflicts.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, the students should be able to:

- discuss other means of peaceful attainment in society;
- explain why some means of conflict management can be categorised as legal methods;
- appreciate the possibilities and limitations of arbitration in the alternative to dispute resolution;
- explain the role and scope of the International Court of Justice; and
- understand the possibilities and limitations of regional agencies in dispute resolution.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Alternative to Dispute “Resolution” (ADR)

The alternative to dispute resolution (ADR) could be referred as a soft mechanism of peace facilitation process. It exploits less painstaking and least expensive means of conflict management. ADR preserves or restores good relationship between or among the conflicting parties through some mechanisms. It provides better peace facilitation process that is more advantaged or preferable and satisfactory than any other conventional conflict management strategy like litigation/adjudication (court approach). This approach was proposed and developed to promote the use of non-violent method in conflict management. It encompasses voluntary and less voluntary wills in conflict management. Its voluntary wills include community-based development, good governance, communication, collaboration, facilitation, negotiation, conciliation, and mediation. Others but less voluntary wills in nature are arbitration, adjudication/litigation (autocratic) and peace enforcement. The ADR's ladder of voluntary and less voluntary wills is at “the higher you go, the hotter or tougher it becomes” in conflict management (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

1. Community-Based Development

The community based development programme is assumed the best initial preventive diplomacy measure for peaceful co-existence attainment in societies. It plays significant roles in sustaining peaceful co-existence. The community-based development programme creates social bonds among the community members and preventing dysfunctional social conflicts. Its community social bonds in Africa preserve the long held tradition of peace that is richer in brotherhood spirits. It promotes group social clustering of bonds among the community members and down plays emergence of dysfunctional. It gives rooms for team work relationship and friendship building. Hence, community-based development programme ensures enduring peace and tranquility (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

2. Good Governance

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020)... this is another important preventive diplomacy measure in ADR, because, the essence of governance is to guarantee a congenial environment where the aspirations and lawful activities can be carried out freely without intimidation and achieve sustainable peace and development at large. It is a pragmatic channel for sustainable peace and tranquility attainment if entrenched.

Good governance entrenches trust, equity, justice, and fairness within a social system. It emphasises egalitarianism.

3. Communication

This mechanism has three components or features, which are: benevolent, malevolent, and ambivalent. Communication is benevolent when information received from another party is beneficial or positive in nature. Malevolent when information given is not favourable, consist of evil and not beneficial at all. Ambivalent when information received brings or produces confusion, mix-up, and ambiguity. Meanwhile, communication or information given to a person is not useful to him/her until the feedback is received. In other words, information management involves exchange and sharing of ideas or views between individuals, or among groups of individual that are potent to a message. It is a crucial weapon or mechanism of interaction. Information helps to remove an iota of doubt or suspicion that disrupts confidence building or peaceful co-existence within the community or among the communities. Poor communication or absence of information and misinterpretation/distortion of information escalate conflict. The role of communication or information management in conflict prevention and crisis management stems from the fact that perceptions, assumptions, attitudes, etc. are sometimes determined conflict outcomes. Hence, the non-violent methods of conflict management such as collaboration, facilitation, negotiation, conciliation, arbitration, and adjudication are largely depended on effective communication. Communication is a cheap non-adversarial method of conflict prevention and management, but once it is lost or distorted, conflicting parties are at the risk of danger or crisis. However, communication is an intangible integral part of human that as old as human being. It is very important and systematically powerful. Effective communication or information management must not be under-estimated or overlooked in conflict management (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

4. Collaboration

This is a situation where the parties involved in a conflict develop a way to manage, curtail, and prevent their conflict scenarios from being destructive. A collaborative effort establishes trust, confidence building, mutual respects with understanding and peaceful co-existence among the parties involved. It could be through a joint task project involving many community members, communities, or societal efforts. Or through a joint task effort on the issues that have common identifiable features or perceived incompatible goals or values. Its assumption is that collaborating together helps to build friendship, mutual respects and understanding between or among the parties involved.

In other words, the levels of collaborations are varied in degrees. They are at inter-personals, inter-groups, inter-communities, nationals, regional or international levels on some projects such as river basin, economic integration, community school building, community health centre, market place, construction of bridge, etc., which could bring mutual understanding and respects among the parties involved. It facilitates activities that could directly or indirectly encourage peaceful co-existence and entrench development at large (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

5. Facilitation

This could be third party or concern party intervention. That is, it is a conflict management mechanism that encourages good managerial approach through consultation or invitational approaches. It involves dialogue and negotiation between or among the parties involved. According to Albert (2001:36) “facilitated dialogue occurs in a situation where a neutral third party tries to restore communication between the two warring parties, with a view of helping them to (re)-consider their area of disagreements and do something positive about it”. Facilitation process helps to provide better conducive environment where clarity of purpose, stage, issues, and expectations in conflict management will be achieved. This has been explored by international organisations on many occasions when there is need for cease-fire agreement and peacekeeping process (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

6. Negotiation

This is a mechanism of gives and takes scenario in conflict management. According to Fisher et al. (2000:115) “negotiation is a structural process of dialogue between the parties involved in a conflict that have opinion differs”. Falkenberg (1982:7) “it is a process where two or more parties facing a problem or conflict about limited resources and attempt to agree on how best to resolve their problem or manage their conflict”. To Mill et al. (1999:21) “it is a process where the parties involved within a conflict seek to settle or resolve their differences”. Moley and Stephenson (1997:26) negotiation...is any form of verbal communication direct or indirect. It is a process where the parties involved in a conflict have interest in discussing their differences without resorting to arbitration, judicial process, but any form of joint actions to manage the dispute between them. Kennedy et al. (1987:14) it is a process of conflict management between two or among more parties, where both or all the parties involved are modifying their demands and achieve mutual acceptable compromise... It is a process where the parties involved would adjust their views to attain positive outcomes.

There are three types of negotiations, they are positional, interest based and principle bargaining. Their attributes and features are hard, soft, and quasi in nature (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

7. Conciliation

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020)... this is another third party or concern party intervention. According to Miller (2003:6-7), "...is the voluntary referral of a conflict to a neutral external party (an unofficial commission) in which non-binding settlement or conduct exploration to facilitate more structures or techniques is used in conflict management. It includes confidential discussion with the parties involved, or rendering of assistance during a pre-negotiation phase". It involves an intermediary effort that aims at persuading the conflicting parties on how best they could find lasting solution to their conflict situation peacefully. It involves facilitation process where parties involved in a conflict provide avenues or opportunities for dialogue or negotiation on how best their conflict situation can be managed successfully. The re-conciliators help to reduce tensions between or among the conflicting parties, but hardly take part in their negotiation. Re-conciliators are called "shuttle diplomats", because, they use their personalities to influence, or initiate peace process in order to achieve peaceful co-existence between or among the parties involved. Hudson (1944) defines 'conciliation' thus: "Conciliation...is a process of formulating proposals of settlement after an investigation of the facts and an effort to reconcile opposing contentions. The parties to the conflict are being left free to accept or reject the proposals formulated". Although conciliation is close to arbitration, but the results of conciliation are not binding on the parties as in arbitration. The re-conciliator to a conflict management must be appointed or agreed by the parties involved

8. Mediation

This is a conflict management mechanism that relies on negotiation process to manage perceived conflicting situation through a third or concern party intervention. According to Miller (2002:23) "mediation is a voluntary, informal, and non-binding process of conflict management undertaking by external parties to foster settlement of differences between or among the affected parties". A mediator remains a mediator when the conflicting parties to a conflict are still trusting or having confidence in his/her mediation. But as soon as their confidence or hope is lost in his/her mediation, or their trust is fading-off in his/her mediation, such intervener is no longer a mediator. To Mill et al. (1999:22) "... is the intervention of a third party or voluntary will process where the parties involved in a conflict could still have control over their conflict matter. It produces positive or negative ends result though depending on situation.

However, there are rules that guided negotiation process in mediation. Its negotiation must be objective, supportive, neutral and not to be too judgmental in nature, etc. Good mediators drive their clients toward a win/win situation and remove the fears of unknown. Mediation involves the use of or bringing a third party to intervene with respect to a conflict. It can also be referred to as a facilitated negotiation. Miller (2002:23) sees mediation as: the voluntary, informal, non-binding process undertaken by an external party that fosters the settlement of differences or demands between directly invested parties (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

9. Arbitration

This could be referred as quasi officially done third party intervention. It is a bit higher or tougher than the mediation process. It is a non-violent method of conflict management that has supremacy over a conflict matter than the conflicting parties themselves. Conflicting parties lose their rights on conflict matters to their arbitrators out-rightly in the process. Best (2004:108) “arbitration process is the used or assistance of a neutral third party in conflict management. Arbitrator listens and hears evidence from the conflicting parties and thereafter renders a decision that is known as award, which is expected to be binding on the conflicting parties”. For example, international arbitration is defined by the international law commission as a procedure for the settlement of disputes between states by a binding award on the basis of law and as a result of an undertaking voluntarily acceptance. The difference between judicial settlement and arbitration is that arbitration allowed parties involved to select the tribunal. Whereas in judicial process, the parties involved have no control over the composition of a judicial body to decide their matters (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Historically, arbitration began with procedures established in 1794 under the Jay Treaty between the United State and United Kingdom for the settlement of bilateral disputes. It provided for the establishment of three joint mixed commissions to which each state nominated an equal number of members to settle some differences, which could not be settled in the course of negotiating the treaty. In 1871, an innovatory arbitration took place and determined the breaches of neutrality by Britain in the American civil war. The Hague Conference of 1899 on the pacific settlement of international disputes led to the creation of an institution known as Permanent Court of Arbitration. Arbitration has the advantages of speed, flexibility, confidentiality and understanding better than conventional adjudication.

9. Adjudication/Litigation/ Legal Method of Dispute Resolution

This is a win/lose situation that is very judgmental in nature. It reflects or depicts zero-sum game of the winner takes all. It involves the use of court system or litigation process.

Conflicting parties that choose this method lose their rights or controls over their conflict matters to a court verdict totally, which may be favourable or un-favourable to them. The court verdict remains their final says and legally binding on them. The verdict is enforced by police whenever it is necessary. It is a time taken, consuming or constraint and painstakingly method in conflict management. It is more expensive than the previous ADR's mechanisms discussed in conflict management (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Judicial or Legal Settlement of dispute is usually carried out by the court duly established and assigned at both the state (local) and international levels. At the International Level, it is usually referred as International Court of Justice (ICI). It is also called "the World Court". It sits at The Peace Palace in Hague. The International Court of Justice is the judicial organ of the six principal organs of the United Nations. It was first established and called Permanent Court of International Justice (PCIJ) after the First World War in 1921. The PCIJ's aim essentially was to established peace in order to preserve the status quo'. The ICJ is an integral part of the United Nations with the UN Charter directing its effort towards establishment of a new international society – a society consistently making progress; a more just society, more egalitarian and show solidarity, more universal - a society whose members are engage in active and collective endeavour that usher in a full and lasting peace.

All members of the United Nations are parties to the statute of International Court of Justice. Article 93(2) of the Charter allows non-member parties to appear before it or join. The duties of this court are:

- i. to settle legal disputes which are submitted by the states in line with international law and;
- ii. to give advisory opinions of legal questions referred to it by the international organs or agencies, which are duly authorised to do so.

The ICJ is usually made up to 15 judges (Article 3). Five of the judges are elected every three years to hold office for nine years (Article 13). They are elected by majority votes of both the Security Council and the General Assembly sitting independently of each other. Usually, it is not more than one judge of any nationality seated in the court. Members of the bench represent the main forms of civilization and the principal legal systems of the world. In practice, 4 judges of the court are usually from Western Europe, 1 from the USA, 2 from South America, 2 from Eastern Europe and 6 from Africa and Asia. The first permanent members of the Security Council are always represented by a judge in the court.

The qualification for the appointment is based on the highest requirements for the highest judicial office in the relevant country. The judges are required to be knowledgeable and competent in the international law through appointment by their home governments. They are required to be independent. In the event of a state appearing before the court without its national on the bench of the International Court, such a state (country) may appoint an *ad hoc* judge for the case as in the Nigeria / Cameroon Boundary dispute before the International Court of Justice. These *ad hoc* judges have the nature of arbitrators. It also lends credence to the idea that each of the judges of the court represents his country. Article 36 (8), Article 38 and Article 39 (3) of the statute of the ICJ also attest to these claims.

11. Peace Enforcement

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020), this mechanism is at the micro and macro levels. Its micro-level is at the court verdicts enforce by police. Its macro-level encompasses peacemaking and peacekeeping operations under the international organisations such as ECOWAS, African Union, European Union, United Nations Organisation, etc. The critical decisions on crises or violence are taken by the international organisations in order to prevent further proliferation or high rate of casualties. The peace enforcement programme at the macro-level was developed by the United Nations in 1946, as a critical mechanism or strategy of preventing and managing insecurity situations that may characterise genocide, intense fighting, injury, armed conflict and struggles, large scale of internally displaced persons (IDPs), refugees emancipation, etc., occurrences. Under peace enforcement programme, political institutions either at the states, nationals, regional or international levels help to de-escalate or cessate violence/hostility struggles through the use of diplomatic effort, mediation and less coercive means of security apparatus. Under the United Nations' peace enforcement programme, there are four types of Charters that encompass different rules of engagements.

The Charters are: Charter six (VI), seven (VII), eight (VIII) and fourteen (XIV) rules of engagements. These are the military/civilian peacekeeping operations. However, before the attempts of peacekeeping operation in a conflicting region, the consents of the conflicting parties must have been sought through peacemaking and peace agreement, which must have been signed by the parties involved. This would symbolise peacemaking or peace broken acceptance of intervention or agreement for peacekeeping operation, in order to avoid encroachment of parties involved national sovereignty rules. The rules of engagements are briefly discussed as follow:

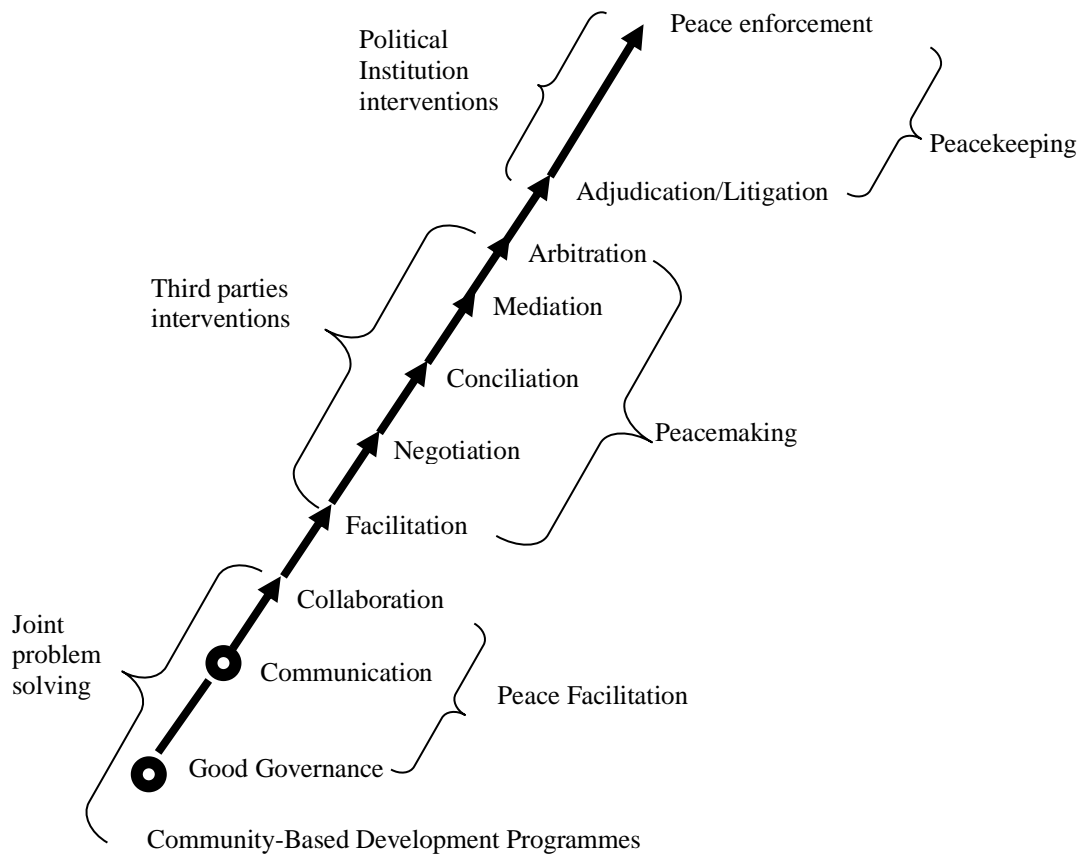
The Charter Six (VI) is the first rule of engagement in the military peacekeeping operations. It allows little or no military force application against the conflict parties. In other words, Charter six (VI) operations give room for limited arms and ammunitions that are meant for peacekeepers' protection. No heavy military armament or coercive capability is allowed against the parties involved in a conflict. The commandants of this charter are soft minded leaders. The Charter Beret cap's colour is Blue that symbolises the rule of engagement.

The Charter Seven (VII) rule of engagement is the second military peacekeeping operations Charter. The military peacekeepers are allowed to use some levels of forces heavier than Charter six (VI) operations. Although, this should be minimal compares to Charter eight (VIII) operations that are full-blown of force applications against the peace agreement violators in order to regain peace at all costs. The commandants of Charter seven (VII) operations are tougher than the Charter six (VI) commandants coupled with their operations' Beret cap colour which is Green that symbolises the operations. A good example of this was in Somalia, Bosnia and Herzegovina operations during the United Nations' intervention, and ECOMOG peacekeeping operations in Liberia against the peace agreement violators. The ECOMOG military operation against the Juntas in Sierra Leone was another good example.

The Charter Eight (VIII) operation is the third Charter and toughest military force applications. It is a full-blown force engagement coupled with the tough military commandants. The heaviest military capacities or equipments are allowed. Charter eight (VIII) Beret cap colour is red that symbolises the operation. A good example of this was in allied forces operation against Iraq and Afghanistan on nuclear weapons proliferation.

The Charter Fourteen (XIV) Mission is the last rule of engagement. It involves international court of justice. Cases of war injustice, war crime and guilty are handled through this mechanism. For example, the recent cases of war crime and guilty against Charles Taylor of Liberia and Al Bashir of Northern Sudan are handled by the court.

Moreover, the peace enforcement is applicable to the areas where there are massive destructions of lives and properties, that is, where there is total violation of law and order remarkably marks with huge massive crime against humanity. It is applicable to the region where there is total failure or collapse of the state. Many scholars and analysts believe that regional mechanisms for dispute resolution may be more effective than broad global measures, which tend to be of a general and voluntary nature.



Alternative to Dispute Resolution Diagram (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020)

4.0 CONCLUSION

In the light of the above discussions, the international law is a phenomenon without compulsory jurisdiction in the event of disagreement or dispute. There are enormous amounts of peaceful and non-violent settlement of disputes taking place at various levels of many communities all over the world. They are all obviously lawful but not all strictly speaking the legal terms. The success of any non-legal means could be determined by the desire or willingness of the parties to end or manage their differences amicably since their decision or agreement reached may be not binding on either party, while the legal means outcome is binding on both parties involved in the dispute. The alternative to dispute resolution in most cases serves as preventive diplomacy system.

5.0 SUMMARY

In this unit, various types or means of peaceful management of conflicts, which are in conformity with the principles of international justice and law were discussed. Both the strengths and weakness of each and means of opportunity were also examined in order to ascertain the validity of the mechanisms.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Discussed Alternative to Dispute Resolution Mechanism
2. Define and explain any three means contemplated for the peaceful settlement of disputes under Article 33.
3. Explain how judges for ICJ are chosen and discuss how you think they should be chosen.

7.0 REFERENCE/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. 2020. *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. Second Edition, Pp 1-560.
- Burton, John (1990). *Conflict Resolution and Prevention*. London: Macmillan.
- Cassese, Chapter 14: 'Promoting Compliance with the Law and Preventing or Promoting Disputes', pp 278 – 95.
- Diamond, Loise and McDonald, John (1996). *Multi – Track Diplomacy: A System Approach to Peace*. West Hartford: Kumarian Press.
- Dixon, Chapter 10: 'The Peaceful Settlement of Disputes'. Pp 285 – 88.
- Kaczorowska, Chapter 15: 'Peaceful Settlement of Dispute Between States', pp 401 – 06.
- Legality of the Treat or Use of Nuclear Weapon (1996) ICJ Reports 66.
- Lederach, John Paul (1997). *Building Peace: Sustainable Reconciliation in Divided Societies*. Washington D C: United States Institute of Peace.
- Mitchell, Chris and Banks, Michael (1998). *Handbook of Conflict Resolution: The Analytical Problem – Solving Approach*. London: Pinter.

UNIT 3 CONFLICT AND WAR INTERVENTION

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 The Concept of Force and use of Force
 - 3.2 Use of Force Before United Nations Creation
 - 3.3 The Charter of the United Nations
 - 3.4 War, Reprisals, Retortion, Intervention and Economic Sanction/Pacific Blocade
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The ideal means of managing or resolving conflict in human endeavours should be through peaceful means like joint problem solving or third party intervention. Hence, the need to control the states monopoly use of force against their social elements should be enshrined in the international law appropriately. This is because the use of force or coercion could hardly bring to an end a violent situation. It usually begets destruction of life and property, but until when states learn how to apply a non-violent method to their problems before there would be peace. The first and second world wars did not come to end until certain stakeholders sit round the table and negotiate the best ways of managing the wars. Despite the clamouring for peaceful method of managing conflicts, some states still delight in using force against their social elements and institutions. All these are the focus of this unit.

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, students should be able to:

- understand the meaning or the concept of force and the use of force;
- clarify the types of force used before the emergence of United Nations; and
- explain the meaning of Article 51 and its constraints on inherent use of force for right protection or self-defence.

3.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 The Concept of Force and the Use of Force

The need to clarify force and its uses in society is the discourse of the section. The sub-headings of this section are concept of force and use of force.

3.1.1 The Concept of Force

The concept of force has several meanings or definitions depending on the perspective or view of the user and the purpose of the usage. Force in Mechanics is a branch of physics. It is an action that tends to maintain or alter the position of a body. Social force means psychic pressure of daily facts which seemingly beyond the power of men or nations to modify or reverse constraints operation of motives in a region. The force in this context can be defined as offensive actions made by an individual, group, nations or states that prompt another nation to change their ways or behaviours. Force may be applied or employed to deter military aggression or force an aggressor to withdraw its armed forces from a disputed territory. The breaking of some international code or gross violation of human rights may also lead to the application of force.

3.1.2 The Concept of Use of Force

Under the international law, the use of force by states is conceived primarily as sending of troops of a state across the borders of the other. A usage of force happens whenever there is a use of armed forces by a state against the other or when a state acts against another through the use of military force under its command. According to international law, the use of armed force is conceived as a situation where there is a physical application of regular or even irregular armed forces with a consequence of force application. The use of force is as well conceivable whenever a force is deployed against the territorial integrity of another state under a lawful occupation of a state. A typical example of this was the conflict between Britain and Argentina over the Falkland or Malvinas Island. Argentina claimed sovereignty of the Falkland Island on the ground that she succeeded to claim the right owner from Spain in eighteenth century discovery when the British's claim the title over the Island derived from early settlement reinforced by the formal claims in the name of the crown of the eighteenth century and complete effective possession, occupation and administration for nearly 150 years. On April 2, 1982 Argentina invaded and occupied the Falkland Islands despite all the British Government efforts toward the peaceful management.

When the British efforts proved abortive, she severed its diplomatic relations with Argentina and froze all the Argentine financial assets held in Britain, banned import from Argentina, suspended new export and credit cover. She also banned the export to Argentina of all arms and other military equipment, and urged her allies and friends to adopt similar measures. However, despite all the above measures, Britain went further to dispatch a naval task force to the South Atlantic, and established a maritime exclusive zone around Falkland Island in order to deny the Argentine forces means of reinforcement and re-supply from the mainland.

On April 25, 1982, despite the Britain's warning asking Argentina to stay clear of the exclusion zone, the Argentine cruiser, General Belgrano, escorted by two destroyers, was seen just outside the zone by a British submarine on May 2. The submarine torpedoed the cruiser and later sank-with about 1,100 crews on board. The 800 among the crews were however rescued due to belated assistance offered by the cruiser of the two accompanying destroyers. Their hostility later degenerated into final breakdown of negotiation leading to massive use of armed force and sophisticated weapons. The British forces eventually took over the control of the Southern Thule on June 20 when a party of military personnel of Argentine navy research station surrendered and later marked the final stage of the Falkland Islands freedom and dependence. On the legal issue, the Argentina argued that Malvinas (Falklands) were part of her territory and her eventual use of force to recover the Islands was in self-defence while Britain also defended her actions in the same manner, which eventually shows that both the Britain and Argentina were buttressed their explanations based on the right of self-defence under the Article 51 of the United Nations Charter.

The Article 51 states that: Nothing in the present Charter shall impair the inherent right of individual or collective self-defence if an armed attack occurs against a Member of the United Nations, until the Security Council has taken necessary measures to maintain international peace and security. Measures taken by Members in the exercise of this right of self-defence shall be immediately reported to the Security Council and shall not in any way affect the authority and responsibility of the Security Council under the present Charter to take any time such action as it deems necessary in order to maintain or restore international peace and security.

3.1.3 Use of Force Before United Nations' Creation

Prior to the emergence of the United Nations Charter, most states applied force during their conflicts or disputes mainly for self-help or self-preservation with its justification found in the natural law concept of self-preservation or self-help, which are used interchangeably and are fundamentally “inherent” in natural law of rights available to states. But because wars were enduring features of seventeenth, eighteenth and nineteenth centuries waging both within and outside the continents in different parts of the world (Africa, Europe, Asia, etc.), conquest becomes the means by which territories were acquired and colonies were won. The ferocity of the battle became great enhanced by the development of more fearful weaponry and weapon of mass destruction. The ability to kill and maim enemies particularly civilians or alike progressed in a remarkable way. The revulsion as a result of this ‘progress’ led to the founding of the International Red Cross in 1863.

As Oppenheim observes, in the Middle Ages, ‘war was a contention between the whole populations of the belligerent states...(and) in the time of war every subject of one belligerent, whether an armed and fighting individual or not, whether man or woman, adult or infant were killed or enslaved by the other belligerent at will. By the twentieth century, war had become almost invariably. A contention of the states through armed forces that led to the increase in awareness of the private subjects of the belligerent states not involved in the contention, but reasonably expects some protection.

Efforts of the League of Nations

Serious attempts have been made to control the forms of warfare prosecuted by states before the First World War. But the attempts to control the recourse to wars received little considerable effort after some wars. This was through the creation of League of Nations and negotiation or adoption of General Treaty for Renunciation of the War, in 1928 that was also known as Kellogg – Briand Pact, and similarly, the Pact of Paris. The Covenant of the League of Nations of 1919 did not purport to the abolition of war but serves as first attempt to provide a permanent forum where the states could negotiate and discuss their differences rather than resorting to war. The second attempt was to place limitations on the use of force. The member states agreed that wherever they had serious dispute the arbitration or judicial settlement or inquiry by the Council of the League should be employed.

There was no resort to war until three months after the completion of such process. Thus, the League of Nations' aim was to provide time for reflection before the recourse to war, that is, a cooling off period for the disagreeing states. Its members also agreed not to go to war with another member who complied with an arbitral award, judicial decision, or unanimous report from the Council of the League. They eventually agreed to 'respect and preserve as against external aggression, the territorial integrity, and political independence of all Members of the League'. Article 16 is another innovation of the Covenant which is not unrelated to the development of the later Chapter VII of the United Nations Charter. Article 16 gives room for collective security for the League of the Nations' members, and the first paragraph states thus:

should any member of the League resort to war in disregard of its covenants under the Articles 12, 13 or 15, it shall ipso facto be deemed to have committed an act of war against all other members of the League, which hereby undertake immediately to subject it to the severance of all trade or financial relations, the prohibition of all intercourse between their nationals and the nationals of the covenant-breaking state, and the prevention of all financial, commercial or personal intercourse between the nationals of the covenant-breaking state and the national of any other state, whether a Member of the League or not.

Although, the League's attempts even to limit recourse to war were scarcely successful, because, the members of the League were unwilling to sanction a state acting in defiance to the covenant. Article 16 in its other paragraphs empowered the League to take such decisions and use military sanctions. Despite all the provisions stipulated in the Article, none was ever effective and economic sanctions were irregularly applied, with the Assembly of the League voting in 1921 to make such economic sanctions optional for each member rather than compulsory.

3.1.4 The Charters of the United Nations

The end of the Second World War gave rise to a renewed determination to use international law to prevent war, where it had begun, and to terminate it. The emergence of the UN Charter came into being out of the determination 'to save succeeding generations from the scourge of war' and the first purpose was contained in Article 1(1) which states thus:

To maintain international peace and security, and to the end: to take effective collective measures for the prevention and removal of threats to peace, and for the suppression of acts of aggression or other breaches of the peace, and to bring about by peaceful means, and in conformity with the principles of justice and international law, adjustment or settlement of international disputes or situations which might lead to a breach of the peace.

Meanwhile, Article 2(3) commits UN member states to manage their international conflicts or disputes by peaceful means in order to ensure international peace, security and justices, and are not to be endangered. Article 2(4) commits members to refrain in their international relations from the threat or use of force 'against the territorial integrity of political independence of any state, or in any other manner inconsistent with the purposes of the United Nations. All of these provisions need to be read together with General Assembly Resolution and Declarations that have sought to interpret them.

The 1970 General Assembly Resolution 2625 – Declaration of Principle of International Law Concerning Friendly Relations and Co-operation among the states in accordance with the Charter of the United Nations is very important in the interpretation of Article 2(4). Though, it is of course just a Resolution but never regarded as expressing by the consensus of the member states with regard to the way in which the article 2(4) is to be interpreted. This Resolution therefore identifies the following duties:

Every state has the duty to refrain in its international relations from the threat or use of force against the territorial integrity or political independence of any other state, or in any other manner inconsistent with the purpose of the United Nations. Such a threat or use of force constitutes a violation of international law and the Charter of the United Nations and shall never be employed as a means of settling international issues. According to the Article:

- a war of aggression constitutes a crime against the peace, for which there is responsibility under the international law.
- in accordance with the purposes and principles of the United Nations, the states have the duty to refrain from propaganda for wars of aggression.
- every state has the duty to refrain from the threat or use of force to violate the existing international boundaries of another state or as a means of solving international disputes including territorial disputes and problems concerning frontiers of the states.

- every state, likewise, has the duty to refrain from the threat or use of force to violate international lines of demarcation, such as armistice lines established by or pursuant to an international agreement to which it is party or which it is otherwise bound to respect. Nothing in the forgoing account shall be construed as prejudicing positions of the parties concerned with regard to the status and effects of such lines under their special regimes or as affecting their temporary character.
- The states have a duty to refrain from acts of reprisal involving the use of force.
- every state has the duty to refrain from any forcible action which deprives peoples equal rights and self-determination or their right to self-determination of freedom and independence referred to in the elaboration of the principle of human rights.
- every state has the duty to refrain from organising or encouraging the organisation of irregular forces or armed bands including mercenaries for incursion into the territory of another state.
- every state has the duty to refrain from organizing, instigating, assisting or participating in acts of civil strife or terrorist acts in another state, or, acquiescing in organized activities within its territory directed towards the commission of such acts when the acts referred to in the present paragraph involve a threat or use force.

In the light of the above, it is obvious that Article 2 (4) goes beyond proscribing war or guiding against the use of force or threat. The word 'force', however, is relative in nature, depending on the angle or perspective at which it is being viewed by different individuals, school of thought, or state. Both political force and economic force could be interpreted clearly within the Article 2(4). It has always been a controversial issue between those states with the capability of exercising economic or political force (or coercion, to use one possible interpretation of 'Force') by resisting such an interpretation, and while those lacking such capability (primarily smaller and developing states) did not want 'Force' confined or limited to 'armed forces'. The generally held view (and one consistent with the interests of the powerful) is that Article 2(4) cannot encompass situations beyond armed forces.

3.1.5 War

The states usually wage war against each other for the purpose of achieving a desired goal or objective. It resorts no peaceful method of managing the conflicts or disputes.

War sometimes is a way of “showing strength” or “act of violence” between or among the states or nations through armed forces with intention or purpose of compelling opponents to do according to wills or to impose conditions of peace as the stronger state pleases. In other words, it is a case or state of winner takes all (zero sum game), or champion and vanquished emergence.

3.1.6 Reprisals

The word or concept of reprisal was known as “*andidepsia*” among the Greeks; and was called “*reprisaglia*” among the Roman. The use of reprisals relate to the coercive actions or measures taken by a state or some groups of individuals against another with intent of avenging the perceived wrong doings. The reprisals in the mediaeval Greece and Rome hinged its justification on the principle of communal or collective responsibility between the citizenry and sovereigns, in which, “they were severely deemed liable for default of the individuals, or a fact attributed to the oneness of interest deemed to have existed between a sovereign and his subjects. Thus, an individual, who had suffered injustice abroad and had been unable to obtain redress in the state concerned, would obtain his own sovereign’s authority to take reprisals against the nationals of the foreign sovereign.

Among the Greeks, for instance, custom permitted the relatives of an Athenian murdered by a foreigner, if satisfactory refused, to seize three fellow countrymen of the murderer and hold them for judicial condemnation, as compensation, or even to death penalty. Unlike retaliation that takes legal form as a state that has right when it so desires or feels to withdraw its presence in another country through withdrawal of its Ambassador. A reprisal is not legal. It is an act relating to the seizure of goods or persons. Today, it manifests in different forms of ranging from bombardment, placement of embargo on goods or boycotting of goods and services being produced by a particular state. A reprisal may also manifest as expulsion of citizens of the enemy country. A typical example of this was in the conflict between America and Libya, in which, America was justifying its bombardment of Libya through violent activities on 15 April, 1986. A reprisal action may also be contemplated in the case of belligerent states. According to Kalshoven, belligerent reprisal is consisted in the international infringement of Law of armed conflict, with a view to make opposing party abandon an unlawful practice of warfare... That is, using humane as a means of enforcing law of armed conflict..., in the interests of humanity”. The belligerent reprisals are not constrained by humanity but are accepted with fatalism according to Kalshoven.

With regard to the objections of the United Nations, it is doubtful if a reprisal action can be justified without first exhausting all amicable methods of conflict management. For example, the Article 2 of paragraphs 3 and 4 of the U.N. Charter provides that: 3 from the member states shall manage their international conflicts by peaceful means in such that international peace, security, and justice, are not endangered. But despite the U.N Charter's proscription of use of force in managing conflict with exception of self-defence many states have been undermining the efforts. According to Article 51 of the UN, noting in the present Charter shall impair the inherent right of individual or collective self-defence if an armed attack occurs against a member of the United Nations till the UN Security Council takes some necessary measures to maintain international peace and security.

The measures taken by the members in exercising its right of self-defence shall be immediately reported to the Security Council and shall not in any way affect the authority and responsibility of the Security Council under the present Charter to take such action at any time as it deems necessary to maintain or restore international peace and security. The most unfortunate thing is that Article 51 also fails either to define 'armed attack' or to specify whether the attack must be territory of the state under attack or the nationals of a state who have been attacked beyond its borders. The example was a situation an Air France aircraft with 251 passengers on board hijacked by the Pro-Palestinians taken its victims to Entebbe, Uganda in 1976. The hijackers released the majority of the passengers but continued to hold 60 passengers, most of whom were Israeli citizens. The Uganda Government (under Idi Amin) did little to bring the hijack to an end before a deadline set by the hijackers that warranted an Israeli commando raid. The Israeli commandos arrived Entebbe unannounced and stormed the hijacked craft, released the passengers, and eliminated the hijackers with 45 Ugandan Soldiers before returning with the passengers to Israel.

Although, this cannot be established whether international law permit such a rescue operation or frown at it. Israel in its defence or justification of her action claimed that Article 51 permits her to use force in such a circumstance in order to protect its citizens abroad if the state in which they found themselves was either unable or unwilling to protect them. This act led to division in the international opinions, which implicitly accepted in some circumstances once the state in question has sufficient power to rescue its citizens. That is, if the intervention would not exceed the proportionate response stated by the Article 51, it would not be regarded as inconsistent. But if it is beyond, it is regarded as inconsistent.

In other words, it is very clear that the ability to exercise such right is now belonging only to the powerful states, which is unfortunate. It is equally clear that claiming of such right is obviously open to abuse. For instance, the United States of America invaded Grenada that supposedly to rescue its nationals in 1983, or when it intervened in Panama case in 1989. The case was neither the primary objective of the US actions to rescue its nationals. However, interventions to rescue nationals are not contrary to the Article 2(4) provided the following conditions are met:

- the threat to nationals is real and imminent;
- the state where they are being held is unwilling or unable to protect them;
- the sole purpose of the intervention is to rescue; and
- the response is proportionate in the sense that more lives are expected to be saved than lost

3.1.7 Retortion

Retortion is another coercive or forcible legal means of conflict resolution by which a nation may show its disapproval by way of retaliation for the discourteous act of another state. It relates to an unfriendly but legitimate act of the nation that has been slighted. Retortion in international law is a phrase used to describe retaliatory action taken by one foreign government against another for the stringent or harsh regulation or treatment of its citizens who are within the geographical boundaries of the foreign country. Or rare retaliatory actions taken by a state whose citizens have been mistreated by a foreign power treating the subjects of such similar power. It can also be defined as mistreatment by one country of the citizens or subjects of another country in retaliation for similar mistreatment received. Although, Article 2(3) of the U.N. Charter provides that: All members shall settle their international conflicts by peaceful means in such that international peace, security, and justice are not endangered. A state that has been slighted may decide to take a legitimate action within its power to register its protest or displeasure against another state. Such state can take different actions for the purpose of pursuing its course. Such actions include termination or severing of diplomatic relations with the state that has thus offended the slighted state. Or, withdraw commercial concession that might have been granted the state as purpose to show disapproval of such unfriendly conduct.

3.1.8 Economic Sanctions / Pacific Blockade

Economic Sanctions/Pacific Blockade may be employed to deter military aggression or to force an aggressor to withdraw its armed forces from a conflicting territory.

Economic sanctions may also be used to curb weapons proliferation.

Article 42 of the U.N. Charter provides that:

should the Security Council consider measures provided by Article 41 would be inadequate, it may take action by air, sea or land forces as may be necessary to maintain or restore international peace and security, such action may include demonstrations, blockade, and other separations by air, sea or land forces of members of the United Nations.

Article 41 in which Article 42 makes allusion provides thus:

The Security Council may decide measures not involving the use of armed force to give effect to its decision, and may as well call upon the members of the United Nation to apply such measures. These may include complete or partial interruption of economic relations and of rail, sea, air, postal, telegraphic, radio and other means of communication, and severance of diplomatic relations. Article 39 of the United Nations Charter provides thus: The Security Council shall determine the existence of any treat to the peace, breach of the peace, or act of aggression and shall make recommendations, or decide what measures shall be taken in accordance with Article 41 and 42 to maintain or restore international peace and security. In other words, international law frowns at war but throws its weight behind self-defence. Any of the member states should adhere to the conditions of the UN Articles. That is, Article 39, 41 and 42 apply to both situations of war, hostility, and self-defence.

The tenor of the provisions of Article 39, 41 and 42 should seem to be that complete or partially interruption either for economic or other reason. The Articles gives the Security Council power to implement “partial interruption of economic relations” to counteract “threats to peace, breaches to peace, and acts of aggression”. The Charter implies that sanctions should only be used to enforce international peace and security. According to Boutros Ghali, the former Secretary General Ghali of the United Nations, “the purpose of sanctions is to modify the behaviour of a party that is threatening international peace and security and not to punish or otherwise exact retribution”. Additionally, the Security Council has the power to make economic sanctions mandatory for the member states. However, studies show that both pacific blockade and economic sanctions in practical terms are being used by the stronger countries against the weaker ones in order to protect their selfish interests. Although, they disguise under the pretence of compliance with the measures of war prevention, execution of treaties, etc...

3.2 Meaning of Intervention

The word intervention does not have a definite meaning but encompasses wide gainsay of activities in relationships between or among states. There exists a distinction in the degree between “intervention as an event” or “intervention as a concept” in terms of modes and characteristic features commonly shared by all interventions, which are referred to as “coming between”, “interposition” or “stepping-in”, or “interference”. Intervention as an event describes materialised “events in real world”. The intervention as an event is a concrete situation that should not lend itself to an arbitrary conception as concept. A typical example of intervention as an event is the violent entry of one state’s affairs by another. It may be embarked upon in order to protect citizens denied justice in a foreign state(s), or for pure humanitarian reasons. It can as well be an expression of policy thrusts to belligerency, independence, insurgency, neutrality, good offices and mediation as well as consular practices. Intervention in a nutshell relates to unjustifiable interference in the affairs of another nation. In as much as it does not have the concurrence of the affected state, it is regarded as forbidden by the rules and practice of the international law. One of the important advantages of political independence is assertion of sovereignty by a state that is so independent. Interference by a state into the affairs of a foreign state is usually regarded as an affront to the status.

3.2.1 Justification of Intervention

Both jurists and political leaders have adduced a lot of reasons in support of their arguments for intervention in a state(s) affairs of a foreign state(s) which are as follow:

1. Intervention as Sanction Against Delict

This is the type of intervention that is carried out for a purpose of forcing a delinquent state to submit to the recognised rules of international law, or, to correct the illegal intervention of another. This simply means that a state that violated or went contrary to the dictates of international law, is liable to encounter intervention by the state against which it had committed the delict. There are times intervention may not arise from a prior delict, but by ignoring the principle of states equality, impermeability of the state sovereignty to external intrusion.

2. Intervention by Consent or Invitation

This is in form of intervention undertaken base on consent or invitation by a legitimate government, which could be through their treaty relations. A consenting or authorising state intervenes into an invitee domestic affair.

A typical example or case study of this was in Cuba and United States 1903, where Cuba authorised the United States to intervene for the preservation of its independence and maintenance of its government.

3. Intervention to Maintain a Balance of Power

There are occasions or instances by which foreign states intervene into the domestic affairs of others for varied reasons in order to save humanity and to foster a balance of power. Intervention could take various forms ranging from sanction, blockade, and withdrawal of financial or technical aids and the use of force. Of all the above mentioned interventions, intervention by force of arms was regarded as the most important method of maintaining balance of power and enforcing the laws of nations. It compelled refractory states to obey the rules which they had agreed to regard as obligatory in their mutual dealings without resort to war. But it harbours the explosive potential of provoking counter (intervention by a third state), which could even lead to war. For example, in 1860, during the Peloponnesian War, Athens sent a fleet in aid of Corcyra against Corinth to prevent the Corcyrean fleet from surrendering or succumbing to Corinthians and upsetting the power balance against the Athenians. Another example of this was in British, French and Russian intervention in Turkey in 1827, which degenerated into wars.

4. Intervention to Save Humanity

This form of intervention is hinged on humanitarian considerations against the violation of the tradition of human rights. It is usually carried out or undertaken unilaterally by one state or states through the use of coercive action to justify such action. Justification of the intervention is usually based on the fact that the target state violated some minimum international law standards. According to Carey at traditional international law, humanitarian intervention was asserted, because, a state, although acting within its rights of sovereignty, violated the rights of humanity beyond the limits of reason and justice, whether the violation applied to its own nationals or the nationals of other nations, possess the right to intervene lawfully. This was based on the understanding that in the international law, there are no perfect rights, no absolute rights; and that all rights must be exercised prudently with ordinary precautions without abusing them or exceeding their equitable limits. This type of intervention is quite different from those that are arbitrarily aimed at imposing a preferred social system on another state by a foreign state like Great-Britain, France and Russia.

3.2.2 Forms or Types of Intervention

a. Internal Intervention

This is the type of intervention where an intervening state interferes in the conflict between two warring parties or disputing parties within a territorial integrity of a state or country. It could as well be a case of legitimate government in a state versus a combating section of the country through insurgents.

b. External Intervention

This is a case of an external or foreign interference in a state fighting whose military armed forces involve in a conflict of another state. That is, the case of country A snowballs into country B war or dispute with another country.

c. Punitive Intervention

This is a case of reprisal intervention because of injury suffered in the hands of another state. This may be carried out in pacific blockade or air blockade against the state being punished.

d. Subversive Intervention

This could be in form of propaganda or other related activities by one state for the purpose of causing revolt or civil strife in another state.

4.0 CONCLUSION

It should be pointed out that, Article 2(4) of the United Nations Charter and the United Nations General Assembly, in its resolution 2131 (xx) of December 21, 1965, re-affirmed the principle of non- intervention in international law. The resolution says:

No state has the right to intervene, directly or indirectly, for any whatever reason in the internal or external affairs of any other state. Consequently, armed intervention and all other forms of interference or attempted threats against the political, economic, and cultural elements are condemned.

However, experience has shown that proscription of intervention here is more of a moral persuasion in its effect, rather than its legal enforcement as it is being displayed by various states either covertly or overtly from time to time all over the world to pursue their selfish interests. The use of negative force should be prevented at all costs for the peace and security to reign.

5.0 SUMMARY

Although, efforts have been made to abolish foreign intervention into another state affairs, but this could not be in all cases. Intervention should not be frowned at in all cases in order to prevent the total acts of inhuman people.

Intervention can be justified within the following premises or conditions. That is, to pursue the UN objectives of peace and security, to protect the rights, interests and personal safety of citizens in need for self-defence and guide against unlawful interference in the affairs of another state. Incessant force application in the interference of the states' affairs should be regulated or avoided.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Should acts of aggression ever justify the use of force as defined in Article 51 of the UN Charter?
2. Explain why reprisals are often carried out without condemnation despite being clearly unlawful.
3. Discuss the reasons for the ineffectiveness of the League of Nations in the maintenance of peace.
4. Of what significance is the UN Charter in restricting the use of force in international law?
5. Critically examine and justify the intervention of a state(s) in the affairs of other state(s).

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Abu-Lughod, I. (1970) (ed.) *The Arab-Israel Confrontation of June 1967: Arab Perspective* Evanston, Northwest: University Press.
- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Akehurst M. (1982). *A Modern Introduction to International Law*. (2nd ed.) London: George Allen and Un-win Ltd.
- Blic, H. (1970). *Sovereignty, Aggression and Neutrality*; Almquist and Wksell Stockholm, the Daq Hammarskjold Foundation.
- Bowett, D. W. (1958). *Self-defence in International Law*. Manchester
- Brownlie, I. (1983). *International Law and Use of Force by State*. (ed) Oxford: Oxford Clarendon Press.
- Casses, A. (1968). *International Law in a Divided World*. Oxford:
- Churchill, R. R. and Lowe, A. V. (1988). *The Law of the Sea*; Manchester: University Press.
- Dias, R. W. M. (1985). *Jurisprudence*. London: Butterworth.
- Dixon, Chapter 11: 'The Use of Force', pp. 301 – 04.
- Falk, R. A. (1963). *Law, Morality and War in the Contemporary World*.
- Fawcett, J. E. S. (1986). *The Law of Nations*. London Allen Lane, The Penguin Press.

- Glahn, G. V. (1976). *Law Among Nations: An Introduction to Public International Law*. (3rd ed.)
New York: Macmillan Publishing Co.Inc.
- Goevel, Jr. J. (1971). *The Struggle for the Falkland Islands: A Study in*
- Henken, L. (1989). *Right V. Might: International Law and the Use of*
Kaczorowska, Chapter 16: 'The Use of Force', pp. 432 – 37.
- Kalshoven, F. (1971). *Belligerent Reprisals*. London, A. W. Sijthoff.
Legal Diplomatic History. London: Kennikat Press.
- Lloyd, D. (1987). *The Idea of Law*. London Penguin Books.
London: Frederick A. Praeger Publisher.
london: Stevens and Sons.
Martinus Nyhoff Publishers.
- O'connell, D. P. (1970). *International Law, Volume One*, (2nd ed.).
- Schacter, O. (1991). *International Law in Theory and Practice*. London:
University Press.

UNIT 4 MULTI-TRACKS DIPLOMACY IN PEACEBUILDING

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
 - 3.1 Multi-tracks Diplomacy
 - 3.2 Peacebuilding Processes: Early Warning Signals, Preventive Diplomacy and amnesty
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The activities of multi-tracks diplomacy in ensuring peace and security in societies cannot be underestimated. This is because every aspect of human endeavour contributes its part to better society just as it is in the law of comparative advantage. Peacebuilding activities involve a construction or creation of peaceful architectural structure or condition for peaceful atmospheric society. It is a long term pre or post hostility preventive measure and strategy for sustainable peace attainment. It removes the root of conflict or hostility through the broad spectrum of activities of stakeholders. Multi-tracks diplomacy entrenches and enhances efforts in conflict management, transformation and peacebuilding. The role plays by multi-tracks diplomacy through its attributes are discussed to broad the students views and understandings in this unit.

3.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, the students should be able to:

- understand the attributes of multi-tracks diplomacy;
- know the roles multi-tracks diplomacy plays in building peace;
- know the strength, weakness, opportunity and threat of multi-tracks diplomacy mechanisms; and
- know the activities of peacebuilding.

4.0 MAIN CONTENT

3.1 Multi-Tracks Diplomacy

Diamond and McDonald (1996:4) define multi-tracks diplomacy as a systemic approach of peaceful co-existence. It comprises nine tracks that help to build peace. The multi-tracks diplomacy approach has attributes or features such as strength, weakness, opportunity and threat called SWOT.

They entrench and enhance efforts on management of conflict, transformation of conflict and peacebuilding. Its tracks are government, non-governmental organisation, corporate body, private individuals, research/training and educational institution, activist or societal watchdog and advocate, religion, funding, media and communication. All these tracks function together to build peace (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

1. Government

This is the first track of multi-track diplomacy approach. It is a situation where government involves in peacemaking, peacekeeping and peacebuilding programmes by investing on institutional agencies that facilitate better ways of managing conflict and building peace through good governance. Usually, government as an institution serves as a protective organ for its citizen's interests. It sponsors workshops on conflict management in order to promote peace and security, or directly and indirectly involves in conflict negotiation, conciliation and mediation processes. International organisations are parts of governing institutions that help to ensure and support activities of peacebuilding as part of global efforts in reducing political, socio-cultural and economic crises across the globe. Their roles encompass mediation, arbitration and funding or grants provision for the peacebuilding programmes. They put in place necessary instructive conflict-prevention and conflict management structures. The features of government activities in peacebuilding include:

Strength: means, government is always exercising legitimate and authoritative powers, enjoying enough resources, jurisdiction and sovereignty, monopoly of coercion and compelling of obedience.

Opportunity: means, government is strong, dynamic, ably represented, enjoying comfortable environment, formulate policy and financially okay.

Weakness: means, government engages in abuse of power, lack of transparency, experiences poor political will at times, insecurity, instability, unaccountability and bureaucratic delays.

Threats: means, government enjoys preponderant use of coercion.

2. Non-governmental Organisations

The NGOs is a private body or establishment that provides alternative support systems for human sociological needs, that is, where the state's political institutions have failed or unable to provide. It is a non-profit body. Its activities are mostly in the area of analysis of conflict, prevention and management, provision for grants, donations and support programmes. Their activities in peacemaking, peacebuilding and preventive diplomacy usually produce better end results.

The features of non-governmental organisations on peacebuilding include:

Strength: means, NGOs enjoying brainstorming, multiple ideas, flexibility, funds, grants, expert, or specialist acquisition.

Opportunity: means, NGOs provide rapid response to issues or event on conflicts.

Weakness: means, NGOs lack fund or experience financial constraints.

Threats: means, some NGOs possess questionable acts, characters and hidden agenda.

3. Corporate Organisations

Since no business can thrive in an area or region undergoing violence, the business or corporate organisations contribute their own quotas to the peacemaking, peacekeeping and peacebuilding process. The features of the activities of the corporate organisations in peacebuilding include:

Strength: means, cooperate organisations are financially buoyant, economically okay and have diplomatic power.

Opportunity: means, they have employment, investment, development, etc. abilities, which are the common issues to the people.

Weakness: means, they have profit motive or making orientation.

Threats: means, they can influence government policies in terms of formulations and implementations to suit their goals.

4. Private Individuals

Individual citizens use their influence to make peace, build peace and engage in community developmental programmes through their citizenships diplomatic exchange of ideas and programmes. The private individuals' or voluntary individuals' abilities and personalities influence peaceful atmosphere or co-existence. The features of the private individuals in peacebuilding include:

Strength: means, they have independent credibility and ability.

Opportunity: means, they possess flexible abilities to intervene.

Weakness: means, they engage in authoritative decision, network influence, and hidden agenda sometimes.

Threats: means, they can be biased or influenced negatively.

5. Research/Training and Educational Institutions

This body is a think-tank of every society or organisation. It engages in educative or training programmes, most especially, on conflict management and peacebuilding specialise skills of mediation, negotiation and transformation. The features of research/training and educational institutions in peacebuilding include:

Strength: means, they have expert power, knowledge and research based.

Opportunity: means, they possess information, multiple ideas, etc. easily.

Weakness: means, they can be biased or engaging in destructive criticism, etc.

Threats: means, they experience financial constraints, and so forth.

6. Activist or Societal Watchdog and Advocate

This mechanism covers activities of civil organisations like human rights protection. They campaign against youth restiveness, proliferation of violence, arms proliferation, socio-economic injustices, protest against bad governmental policies or bad governance, corrupt practices, etc. that threaten the peace and sustainable development, etc. of any societies. It features in peacebuilding include:

Strength: Means, they are informative, very conscious and conscience on governance, decision making, etc.

Opportunity: Means, they have timely information, mass mobilisation, and so forth.

Weakness: Means, they can be extremists with different ideological reasons, etc.

Threats: Means, they engage in destructive criticism, use of violence, national security threats and others.

7. Religion

Since much respect is accorded to religious leaders within social system, that is, they have spirit of pacifism, humanitarianism, non-violence, brotherhood or brotherliness are promoted by the religious leaders and societies. Every religion preaches against violence and encourages peaceful co-existence through their sermons. The features of this track on peacebuilding are:

Strength: Means, they have mass appealing, compliance of the believers, etc.

Opportunity: Means, they preach peace and non-violence.

Weakness: Means, they are instruments in the hands of some political leaders and can be manipulated.

Threat: Means, they engage in bigotry, extremism, and exclusive rights abuse among others.

8. Funding

This is a salient factor and critical issue that can determine success of any peace programmes. Many funding foundations or organisations are established, most especially, in the developed world, to provide necessary resources and support package for peace activities. Its features on peacebuilding are:

Strength: means, they have availability of resources, influence, flexible wills, etc.

Opportunity: means, they ensure stability, orderliness, and so forth.

Weakness: means, distance, ignorance and information among other things affect their activities.

Threats: means, they experience insecurity on their resources, misappropriation, corruption, etc.

9. Media and Communication

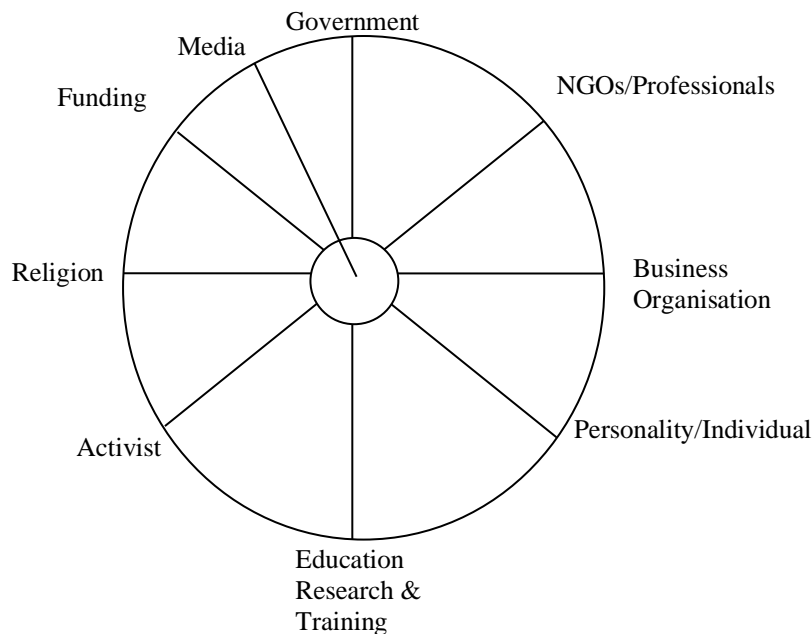
The media and other information-management channels aggregate public opinions and people's views. They help to promote peace through their programmes. They project or cover activities of other mechanisms like government, non-governmental organisations, businesses, corporate organisations, private individuals, research/educational institutions, activists, religion and funding on peacebuilding. The features of media and communication organisations in peacebuilding include:

Strength: means, they have large coverage, followership, influenced perception, etc.

Opportunity: means, they engage in sensitisation, awareness, education among others.

Weakness: means, they can be subjective, manipulated, etc.

Threats: means, they can be biased, experiencing insecurity, and so forth.



Multi-tracts Diplomacy Chart

3.2 Peacebuilding Processes

Peacebuilding is a long term pre or post hostility preventive measure and strategy for sustainable peace attainment. It removes the cause of conflict or hostility through human socio-structural stability of strengthening. But peacemaking and peacekeeping processes precede the peacebuilding programme in conflict managements. Peacebuilding mechanism normalises and reconciles warring factions' relationships through a sustainable development programme. The techniques or strategies required include negotiation, mediation, arbitration, official and unofficial circular flows of efforts that come from the multi-tracks diplomacy system (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Definitions of Peacebuilding

1. Boutros-Ghali (1992:11) post-conflict peacebuilding is an action of identifying and supporting the structures that tend to strengthening and solidifying peace, in order to avoid any relapses of conflicts.
2. Mpangala (2004: 8) defines peacebuilding as a process of making sure that a country or society creates conditions for sustainable peace. Such conditions could be created when a country is already in the state of being peaceful. The condition is created in order to prevent any forms of conflict eruption and let the peace reign. Peacebuilding situation may be pre- or post-conflict condition of life, which should be a continuous process that entails various measures. Specifically, in Africa, it includes transformation of state organs, socio-economic development, democratisation and regional integration.
3. Lederach (1995:19) sees peacebuilding as a concept that encompasses or generates and sustains full array of process, approach and stages that transform a conflict situation towards a sustainable peace attainment.

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) all these involve a diverse range of actors and activities commencing in a pre or post-conflict project. It is broadened to cover entire conflict spectrum like pre-conflict, where issues on conflict prevention and eradication of structural violence can be addressed; during the conflict, where emphasis should be on conflict mitigation and containment. It addresses issues among the warring factions or communities in order to avoid relapses of such conflict. Wallensteen (2007:4) peacebuilding is primarily about how to "provide conditions that would make inhabitants of any society secure in life and dignity for a foreseeable future". Peacebuilding was expanded to encapsulate conflict prevention, conflict management, post-conflict reconstruction, and above all, development. Wallensteen practically applied this to the conflict spectrum as a whole –such as pre-, during - and post-conflict situations. In all cases, sustainability of peacebuilding is very important to achieve needed sustainable peace and development.

In post-conflict era, peacebuilding programme starts immediately after the cessation from hostilities and peacekeepers have secured a post-conflict environment.

For peacebuilding to be effective, successful and sustainable, its process needs to involve effective mobilisation and participation of the broad possible range of local, regional and international stakeholders that include local civil groups and community-based organisations, traditional institutions and grass-root communities, government departments, institutions and agencies, (sub) regional organisations, inter-governmental bodies, international civil societies and donor agencies, voluntary organisations, charities, etc. The local participation and ownership are the ultimate bulwarks of peacebuilding without which sustainability cannot be achieved. Post-conflict reconstruction involve rebuilding of socio-economic framework of society and reconfiguration of enabling conditions for better functioning at peace time society, using the framework of transparent governance and rule of law (World Bank, 1998). It emphasises physical rebuilding of infrastructure and incorporates social re-engineering coupled with the rebuilding of shattered communities.

Globally, post-conflict reconstruction is conceptually attached to a wider peacebuilding process marks with activities that underline the processes of preventing, alleviating or managing crises. It is designed to reverse destructive processes that accompany prolong violence. Post-conflict reconstruction is anchored on security reform that guarantees personal and territorial protection, disarming, demobilising, rehabilitation and reintegration of ex-combatants and displaced populations; rebuilding and resuscitation of infrastructural facilities; ensuring of citizens' rights and justice, rule of law and reconciliation; socio-economic reforms; political reforms, etc. These are implemented through a consortium of different agencies that are relevant to the whole process, such as local communities, international community, non-governmental organisations and aid, funding or donor bodies. The post-conflict reconstructions create governing systems that are predictable, impartial, and established socio-economic rules for development. It also creates a judicial system that upholds contractual obligations, protection of property rights and guarantees commercial interests that produce reliable and enforceable outcomes.

Its disarmament is the collection, documentation, control and disposal of small arms, ammunitions, explosive objects, light and heavy weapons of the ex-combatants or armed groups within the civil population in the conflict zones.

Essentially, it involves establishment and initiation of arms management programmes like collection and destruction of weapons as well as demining of warring factions' traps. It encourages ex-armed groups or ex-combatants with some support packages to give up their weapons voluntarily. Wherever the peacekeepers are involved in disarmament process, they take charge of weapons collection and destruction. Ideally, taking away weapons from the ex-combatants to secure peaceful environment is very crucial to a peacebuilding process.

Peacebuilding demobilisation induces disbanded of combatant organisations, structures and encourages shifting from "combatant" acts to a "civilian" status. It involves registration of individual ex-combatants and their weapons in rehabilitation centres, and provision for their transitional support/assistance packages that can help them and their families meet up with the immediate needs, such as food, clothes, shelter, medical services, short-term remedial education, training, employment, tools, discharge of duty and transportation to get to their home and communities easily. Its reintegration process is a longer-term socio-political and economic process with an open time frame design to facilitate assimilation of displaced populations, sacked communities, and ex-combatants in a way that allows them to adapt to a civilian life. In most cases, its processes involve provision for cash and some forms of compensation packages like providing longer-term job or career training that initiate sustainable income-generation projects.

It usually accompanies by rehabilitation of war-affected individuals and reconstruction of national infrastructures that were damaged as a result of violence. In some cases, ex-combatants may be encouraged to merge with the new national military force as parts of security sector reform during reintegration process, which is critical to a post-conflict peacebuilding success. In other words, reintegration can be sustained when indigenous capacity has been enhanced, and when ex-combatants and other war-affected individuals have become productive members of the communities, or when post-conflict societies begin to learn how to address conflicts in non-violent ways (Andy, 2008:7). The peacebuilding process has no rigid canonical definition. It is broadly referred as actions undertaken after a cessation of conflict to consolidate peace attainment and prevent re-occurrence of armed confrontation (Anna, 1998). Some political leaders in developed nations take into account the problems of failed states in their foreign policies (Blair, 2006). Issues such as methods of dealing with armed and civil conflicts, consequences of wars, role of democracy, economic interdependence, membership of international organisations in reinforcing peaceful relationship, practical challenges of peacebuilding process and ideological assumptions are needed to be well structured in post-conflict era.

The issue of state failure includes causes and characteristics as well as how to deal with the problems associating with the state failure and fragility. The peacebuilding process seeks to prevent any re-occurrence of violence in the countries that are just coming out of war or conflict situations. In a nutshell, peacebuilding is a continuous process that involves a broad range of activities that aim at consolidating peace and seek to address both the root cause of conflict and measure for bolstering peace agreement in the aftermath of a conflict situation. It involves transformation of political, institution, socio-economic and cultural landscape that degenerated into a violent conflict.

3.2.1 Early Warning Signal

Early warning signal involves activities that are related with the data gathering and their analysis (information), which could give an insight on developing conflict. Effective early warning signal combines historical, socio-political, humanitarian information, result and forecast of conflict dynamics and their effectiveness. Early warning signal is a component of overall processes that address developing conflicts. In other words, early warning signal includes activities like data gathering and their analysis (information) that provides an insight for conflict emergence. Its effectiveness combines historical, socio-political, information analysis and forecasts on conflict dynamics, and address them effectively. It is an overall component of identifying or addressing developing conflicts.

3.2.2 Preventive Diplomacy

Preventive diplomacy involves activities of forestalling and preventing escalation of conflicts from becoming a widespread violence. It includes broad range of actions like confidence building, fact-finding, diplomatic measures that encompass negotiation and mediation, relief and rehabilitation effort, democratic promotion through the strengthening of civil society institutions that guarantee electoral process transparency, good economic and social measures, developmental assistance, orientation programme and aid, promotion of national reconciliation through institutional development, constitutional reforms and re-socialisation, education and social means. Others are to develop civil society institutions like media and deployment of preventive peacekeeping forces or military observers. Preventive diplomacy encompasses circular flows of multi-track diplomacy mechanism activities.

3.2.3 Amnesty

Amnesty is a longstanding political tool used by the states or societies wishing to quell dissent and introduce reforms to achieve a peaceful relation with enemies. This means amnesty as a political tool could be used, or has been differently used to achieve certain political goals that depend on circumstances that necessitate certain issues.

It is a political pardon for social orders or norms for dissidents, or criminals that are subjects of trial. In the legal sense of it, amnesty is conceptualised as parts of government efforts to obliterate crime records of some people or law suits against someone (Sear, 2002 and Mallinder, 2008:9). In other words, amnesty is a legislative act by which a state could restore persons who may have been guilty of an offense against the position of innocent persons (Wikipedia and Ogundiya, 2011:7). To some scholars, amnesty, pardon and forgiveness are seemingly synonymous. Objectively, amnesty as a politics of forgiveness should be a product of negotiation that should be diametrically opposed an asymmetry of forgiveness. Its monotheistic tradition is inseparable from being entrusting with the power of pardon (Nasongo, Achoka and Wanmocha, 2009).

In line with this, amnesty takes different dimensions that could be conditionally or unconditionally attached, or being selective or collective. Its law or programme exhibits different characteristics. The motivational factors behind amnesty proclamation are informed by internal crisis management paradigms, in terms of nature, peace and reconciliation, response to peace advice, socio-cultural traditions, return of exile citizens, rights protection, political strategy or protection of state's officers from prosecution, etc. It could also be introduced to attract supports or strategies to legitimise a regime and delegitimise or undermine a popular oppositional group. Amnesty could be used to cover a state's incapacitation or inability to contain rebellion or militancy acts. The declaration of amnesty depends on socio-political context and domestic legal framework -in terms of discretion exercise, peace negotiation and agreement, referendum, etc. In whatever forms, amnesty has been identified as parts of the peace process, and to some extents, it is morally or politically just. But to some people, amnesty is an attempt to cover-up a crime, or, to connive with the criminals. Amnesty like post-war activities involves disarmament, demobilisation, rehabilitation and reintegration of those who are deviant to certain socio-political regulations. Its disarmament process involves collection, documentation, control and disposal of small arms and ammunition, explosive and light or heavy weapons of ex-combatants through the help of arms management programme. While its demobilisation programme involves formal control and discharge of active combatants from armed forces or armed groups. It provides support packages for the demobilised combatants and basic needs and financial assistance for their families (Bryden, 2007), which has become a problem to many amnesty programmes. Its rehabilitation process transforms violent psychic of militants or combatants to a civilian status or non-violent nature, which should be carried out in a camp.

Its reintegration process involves acquiring or regaining of civilian status that includes viable sustainable empowerment of the ex-militants.

It is a socio-economic process that involves an open time-frame for the combatants or militants at the community levels. Its reintegration is a long term socio-economic involvement and inclusiveness of ex-militants or ex-combatants in a developmental programme. Its implementation determines its outcomes in terms of sustainable peace attainment, which is a problem to many states. For example, it is not in doubt that amnesty in the Niger Delta of Nigeria is a 'child' of circumstance that his or her birth took place at the time incessant crises and controversial resource control agitations that lack a clear focus took place (Ogundiya, 2011:10). In other words, amnesty and peace process are beyond a mere political proclamation of pardon.

5.0 CONCLUSION

To ensure peace and security require a proper utilisation of public resources for public good. The stakeholders need to appropriate government policies to foster peace and security. Every society requires services and institutions that improve the capital accumulation and foster social trust, and thereafter, stimulates sustainable peace and security. Peace programme requires dedicated and charismatic leaders that ensure transparency and accountability, rule of law, public participatory mechanisms, dialoguing on policy formulation and implementation within their social system. Poor governance is characterised by arbitrary policy making, unaccountable bureaucratic practices, unjust legal systems, widespread corrupt practices, etc. All these are the focus of multi-tracks diplomacy in building peace in every society, which have been discussed for students' understandings in this unit.

6.0 SUMMARY

There is no doubt creating an enabling environment and effective capacity building for social peace and development has been discussed in this unit. The system of governance in society requires a political renewal where a concerted attack on corrupt practices from the highest levels is undertaking. This is because; governance is a creative politics, most especially, with the ability of socio-political leaders to rise above the existing social structures and changed the rules of the games by inspiring other citizens to partake in the efforts that build peace and move their society forward. It would be a waste for socio-political context of every society not to be favourable to peace and security. Efforts on peacebuilding must involve a broad spectrum of stakeholders which students of this field must inculcate for a brighter future.

7.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. What is Multi-tracks Diplomacy in Conflict Management?
2. Discuss the roles of Multi-tracks Diplomacy and its features in Peacebuilding.

3. What are the activities of Peacebuilding in Pre-conflict and Post-Conflict situations?

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Adedoyin, A. (2014). An Impact Assessment of Post-conflict Reintegration in Liberia. Ph.D. Thesis Submitted to the Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Adedoyin, A. (2010). "Governance and Peacebuilding in Post-Conflict Liberia". A Ph.D. Research Proposal in Peace and Conflict Studies Programme, Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Ameen, D. (1998). *OAU/IPA: Joint Task Force Report on Peacemaking and Peacekeeping Raporteur*, International Peace Academy. Conflict Research Consortium, University of Colorado, USA. <http://www.ipacademy.org> (Accessed on 4th April, 2009).
- Amnesty International, (2008). Liberia: Greater Efforts Needed for Reintegration of Former Female Fighters, Amnesty International Paper. (Accessed in 2010).
- Anaan, K. (1998). The Causes of Conflict and Promotion of Durable Peace and sustainable Development in Africa. A/52?871-S/1998/318.
- Andy, W. K. (2008). Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration and Post-conflict Peacebuilding in Africa: An Overview. Department of Political Science, University of Alberta, Edmonton, Alberta, Canada and International Development Research Centre, Ottawa, Ontario, Canada, Journal of African Security. Retrieved 30th October, 2012.
- Blair, T. (2006). Speech Delivered to the General Assembly of the United Nations of World Submit. www.number-10-gove.uk
- Boutros-Ghali, B. (1992). *An Agenda for Peace*, New York: United Nations.
- Brahimi, L. (2000). Report of the Panel on United Nations Peacekeeping. New York, UN. Retrieved May 16, 2010 from http://www.un.org/peace/reports/peace_operations.
- Bruce, A. (1993). *An Integrated Framework for Peacebuilding, Human Rights and Development*, London, University Press.

- Bryden, A. (2007). Linkage between DDR and SSRR: Understanding the DDR-SSR Nexus, Building Sustainable Peace in Africa. Kinshasa, Democratic of Congo
- Iroha, O.B.J. (2005). *The Quest of Peace and Security after Taylor*. In Adebayo, A. 2006. *Africa Conflict, Peace and Governance Monitor, an annual Publication on the state of Governance in Africa*. African Centre for Development and Strategic Studies; Ibadan, Dokun Publishing House.
- Mpangala, A.P. (2004). Conflict and Post-conflict Situation in Africa, Journal of Peace Studies.
- Omeje, K. (2009). *War to Peace Transition*. Conflict Intervention and Peacebuilding in Liberia. University press of America, Inc, United Kingdom, Estover Road Plymouth PL67 py.
- Reychler, L. et al. (2001). Conceptual Framework, in *Peacebuilding: A Field Guide*, Lynne Rienner, London
- Sesay, I. et al. (2009). Post-war Regimes and State Reconstruction in Liberia and Sierra Leone. Council for the Development of Social Science Research in Africa, Angle IV, Senegal.
- UNCHR, (2004). Handbook for Repatriation and Reintegration Activities. Geneva.
- United Nations, (1945). The Charter of United Nations Article 1, New York, United States of America.
- United Nations, (1998). The Causes of Conflict and the Promotion of Durable Peace and Sustainable Development in Africa. The Secretary General's Reports.
- United Nations, (2007). United Nations Development Assistance Framework for Liberia. Consolidating Peace and National Recovery for Sustainable Development.
- University of Colorado, (2006). "Peacemaking": Conflict Research Consortium, International Online Training Programme on Intractable Conflict. Retrieved June 28, from <http://www.ipacademy.org/publications/report/africa/publrepoafri pp98p rint.htm>
- UNMIL, (2005). Proxy Indicators : Status of Restoration of State Authority and Recovery in Liberia. Civil Affairs Section, Liberia Monrovia.
- Wallenstein, P. (2008). Strategic Peacebuilding; Issues and Actors. Retrieved March 8, 2008 from http://kroc.nd.edu/ocpapers/op_28_1.pdf.

UNIT 5 PEACE AND DEVELOPMENT

CONTENTS

- 1.0 Introduction
- 2.0 Objectives
- 3.0 Main Content
- 3.1 Meaning of Peace and Peace Types
- 3.2 Development and Underdevelopment
- 4.0 Conclusion
- 5.0 Summary
- 6.0 Tutor-Marked Assignment
- 7.0 References/Further Reading

1.0 INTRODUCTION

The needs for peace and security in society cannot be over emphasised made a request for every student to study this subject. That is, peace is a value and necessary ‘ingredient’ for meaningful development. Its presence ensures law, order, and tranquility. It can only be achieved through justice, fairness, fear of God, harmony and cares. The absence of peace creates general insecurity, disorderliness, and lawlessness that lead destruction of lives and properties. Of what importance is the peace to development is the focus of this unit

2.0 OBJECTIVES

By the end of this unit, the students should be able to:

- ensure peace in their homes and societies;
- know the importance of peace to development;
- discuss development, underdevelopment and their indices or indicators ; and
- clarify/distinguish between development and underdevelopment and their attributes in societies.

3.0 MAIN CONTENTS

3.1 Peace

According to Adedoyin (2015 and 2020) peace is defined as absence of war, fear, threat, anxiety, suffering, violence, etc.; meaning, a state of peaceful co-existence. It involves activities that lead to sustainable development either directly or indirectly. Peace is a value and necessary ‘ingredient’ of security of life, property, and meaningful development (Ogomudia, 2007:1).

Oguntomisin (2004:59) peace is *sine qua non* with socio-political stability, economic development, and social well-being of humans. It is a greatest desire of communities or nations at all times. Peace is a present of law, order, and tranquility. It is based on justice, fairness, fear of God, harmony and cares.

Nwolise (1998:3) “peace is needed for: (1.) individuals to have rest of minds, pursue their legitimate means of livelihood and develop their potential for fullness; (2.) smooth and full social interactions between individuals or groups of individual within and across nations; (3.) rapid scientific, technological and economic development that positively catalyse maximisation of people’s welfare; (4.) removal of damage of wars; (5.) ending diversion of development resources from socio-economic needs of citizens to defence and war efforts; and (6.) safe trade and interaction...” All these make every society to develop elaborate strategies or coping mechanisms for peace education, confidence building, conflict prevention and management. Thus, every individual, group or state needs peace within and between themselves (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020). That was why, United Nations on world peace and security in 1945 established Article 1 of its peace charters to maintain international peace and security. In other words, the need for collective security and maintenance of international peace made its members to agree that all its member states should join hands together to prevent members from using coercion against any other states in order to gain advantage, most especially, in conquering one another (Weiss, 1993:3). That is, absence of peace would create general insecurity, disorderliness and lawlessness, and gives room for destruction of lives and properties.

However, peace does not exist in the absolute absence of conflict. No matter how peaceful a society or man may be, there would be one conflict or the other, which can be conflict of needs to meet-up with certain conditions of life such as food, resources, clothing, shelters, status, marriage partners, etc. There are two types of peace, that is, negative peace and positive peace (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020), which are discussed below.

Types of Peace

1. Negative Peace:

The peace enjoys in a home or society is negative when its members are forced to be calmed or peaceful through the use or application of force, or the use of security apparatus like military, police force, etc. to remain calm. It could also call peace of a grave yard or a time bomb that explodes at any time.

If such situation is not well handled, it would metamorphose into total insecurity or state collapse situation. Such situation arises when a society is poorly or badly structured and governed, that is, when a social institutional practice is full of injustice, exploitation, corrupt practices, impunity, capitalist exploitation, etc., and experiences social disorderliness or structurally defective. However, negative peace can be transformed into positive peace provided necessary institutional structures of positive change and peace are put in place. Institutional structures such as basic necessity of life, infrastructural facilities, etc (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

2. Positive Peace:

The peace is positive when its existence at home or society is legitimate peace. That is, a situation where social institution receives the maximum support of its people. The people are peaceful because they are satisfied with what is obtainable in their homes and society. There is fairness, justice, equity, even distribution of resources. They are all happily tolerating or considering one another. Everybody is fairly treated, okay and satisfied with the affairs of their homes and society. There is public participatory system in the affairs of the society and governance. There is no exploitation or discrimination against anybody on the ground of gender, belief, creed, ethnicity, religion, etc. People or citizens are not forced to be calmed by security apparatus. In other words, positive peace produces sustainable peace and development. That is why, in the analysis of peace, flowers are used to represent and analysed peace, because, they produce or yield seeds and food that sustain people and their society. Ironical, people or society hardly takes note of the important of flowers and peace that ensure sustainability of human race in the long run. On the other hands, tree is used to represent and analysed conflict, because, tree is conspicuous like conflict. It can easily be identified at a glance, likewise, a conflict situation; which means, peace is a state of social order and stability. It ensures security of life and property. But peace does not exist in the absolute absence of conflict (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Peace Education and Culture

Peace education or culture involves impartation of the knowledge, orientation and skill of peace in society. UNESCO defines peace as a set of values, attributes, behaviours and life styles or activities that reflects and inspires by respect for human dignity, rights and dedication to the principles of freedom, justice, solidarity, tolerance or understanding of people or groups in societies. Meaning, wherever the features of peace and security are lacking, special attention needs to be given to peace education and culture.

This is because; culture of peace ensures tolerance, dialogue, mutual understanding, joint problem solving, negotiation, integration, justice, democratic situation, etc. In other words, social system and education should involve peace attributes. The civic education for example instills in citizens a sense of being peaceful and produced leadership with proper orientations and attitudes that build peace into society. Peace education and culture are anchored on individual(s) and territorial protections. It improves civility and democratic practices. It encourages social justice that guarantees good governance, rule of law, masses participation in politics, effective and efficiency administrative processes. Peace culture reconciles any disassociated or disintegrated societies through knowledge, re-orientation, reconstruction, rehabilitation and reintegration of citizens back to united social system. In other words, the future of peace is embedded in peace education and culture (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Violence is always profoundly affected the minds of people and their physical appearances. It makes people to be less sensitive to the pains and sufferings of others, and be fearful of world around them and aggressively behaved. Specific efforts are required to prevent violence and its effects through peace culture. Peace cannot be imposed; it comes or develops from within through proper efforts. To institutionalised culture of enduring peace require attributes such as economic well-being, social justice, ecological balance, violence and insecurity curtailment, etc. in societies. Establishment of peace culture requires collective efforts. Every governing system needs to be sensitive to the issues of poverty reduction, social justice, responsibility, equity, fairness, minority rights, welfare of children and women rights, etc. in the societies. Their efforts must include platforms and networks for better relationships that promote and strengthen people's free interactions, fairness, dialogue, mutual support and collective response to the challenges of societies. Social justice and harmonious relationships ensure and build trust among the people, which in the long run guarantees sustainable peace.

3.2 Development and Underdevelopment

Adedoyin (2015 and 2020)... the capacity or ability to deal with the opportunities abound for development depends on the extent at which the social elements can influence the law of nature for their benefits. In other words, every social system struggles to extend its controls over environment, which in the long run refers as development. But this could not be achieved under the constant menace of social unrests and poor institutional structures that constitute insecurity and underdevelopment situations. That is, the emphasis of a reasonable society should be on how to create a better living condition for its citizens.

Ironically, underdevelopment of many societies was not as a result of lack of resources but inability to harness opportunities or resources abound in their environment for development orientation and actualisation. That is why, they remained in the ranks and files of those countries refer as underdevelopment or less developed nations, due to inability to utilise the rare opportunities abound in their locality. Their citizens live below World Bank poverty level because of the poor commitments and wide spread of corrupt practices of their leaders. In the midst of abundant resources, they have no improvement in the conditions of living.

For example, Gowon (2009) “the 2007 World population data sheet of Population Reference Bureau estimated Sub-Saharan Africa to be 788 million people and perhaps the richest region in terms of natural resources in the world. Yet, with all the resources, the region presents the worst indices of both structural defection and underdevelopment. The gross national income per capita in Sub-Saharan Africa is \$746. The percentage of malnourished of under five years old children stands at 29%, maternal mortality is scandalously higher at 1 in 16 unlike 1 in 3, 800 in the developed countries, and barely 42% of the population have access to clean water in the rural areas. The extent of mass poverty level remains unacceptable”. Meaning, virtually all the West African countries are at the lower level of global development competitiveness according to the World Economic Forum.

Gleditsch (2001) observes that armed conflicts pose a major challenge to development in Africa. Indeed, for peace and stability to endure in Africa, there is need to complement the process that involves the quest for peace and development. Development attainments in most cases help to address the root cause of conflict and insecurity. The crisis of insecurity in West Africa forces various segments of the countries to live in precarious condition. That is, conducive atmosphere that ensures human security and encompasses protection of lives and property, precondition for people’s improvement, protection of human rights, development and provision for basic human needs are crucial to development actualisation. Diamond (2004) countries that have failed to realise their development potentials in the past half-century have invariably suffered yawning deficits of conducive environment, invariably, good governance. In the development laggards, poor condition constitutes a treacherous obstacle... The most single intractable obstacle to vigorous sustainable development is poor governance. A good socio-political and economic system that ensures social order and stability are key objectives of development attainments (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

3.2.1 Definitions of Development

Development as a concept defies a precise definitional meaning.

(1.) Duffield (1994:38) defines development as a normative process of becoming series of interconnecting movements leading from poverty and vulnerability to security and well-being.

(2.) Seer (1995:21-36) conceives development as a creation of conditions for realisation of human personality, which implies a reduction in poverty, unemployment and inequality.

(3.) Anderson and Woodrow (1989:12) see development as a process through which people's physical/material, social/organisational, motivational/attitudinal vulnerabilities are reduced, and their capacities for progress are increased.

(4.) Mc Carthy (1994: 32) defines development as involving steady adoption by modern society that is not necessarily on western values but absorption of culture.

(5.) Todaro (1999:18)... consideration of social justice and human satisfaction should be regarded as essential components of development. It liberated people from poverty and stunned view of self. It enhances human's overall and collective personalities. At all the levels of individuals, development implies increased in skill and capacity. It is a greater freedom in creativity, self-disciplined, responsibility, material and nutritional well-being.

(6.) Idode (1989:9) development is a changing process characterised by increased productivity, equalisation in distribution of social products and emergence of indigenous institutions whose relations with the outside world, particularly, the developed countries are characterised by equality than independence and subordination.

(7.) Jarret (1996:16) development is the promotion of political and economic advancement to facilitate comprehensive building of nations. Development benefits human collective effort. In other words, it entails economic growth, social contentment and improved well-being of individuals.

(8.) Adedeji (1986:4) contends that economic and material growth should not be viewed as sufficient manifestations of development. To define development, something that constitutes basis for development must not be taken for development itself. Development transcends growth and embraces quality of life such as social justice, equality of opportunity for all citizens, equitable distribution of income and democratisation of development process. Development is fundamentally referred as humans and social advancement in all endeavours. In other words, it is human experience that synonymous with the individuals' mental, emotional and physical well-being fulfillment, and not just growth of anything (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Development is not a mere transformation of structures and material attributes. It involves authentic self-reliance that is inevitably resulted into transformation and brings change. It brings about fundamental sustainable change in society.

This mean, development is a transformation of human society and a move from old ways of thinking or old forms of socio-economic organisation to the new advance ones (Stiglitz, 2000). According to Stiglitz, the new view of development and developmental transformation involves a change in the way people think and ways society function, that is, a change in norms, expectations and institutions. The lesson from 20th century is that successful development process was ultimately derived from home-grown strategy and not from imported theories. Most of the industrialised countries owe their successful development to their workable models. Development is futuristic and a means of improvement in the quality of life. It involves acquisition of knowledge and skill. Development entails changes in the attitudes and ways of doing things. It offers advanced skills to individuals or group of individuals. It involves learning and presentation of appropriate content of enhancement and improvement in work ability and behaviour. Training of people is keen to the individuals, organisations and society development, which will impact significantly on social system. Development is a growth plus change, while change in return is a socio-cultural transformation as well as economic qualitative and quantitative... It improves quality of life (United Nations, 1962).

More importantly, human development is a systematic growth or gain and applies of knowledge, skills, insights and attitudes to duties effectively. It estimated the demand and supply of societal managerial approach. Human development includes efforts of improving quality of social wellbeing that built confidence and ensures efficiency and effectiveness of people. It is a general improvement of human conditions in order to overcome malnutrition, illiteracy, unemployment, diseases, slums, inequality, lack of technologies, insecurity, etc. Development enlarges citizens' choices in terms of health and longer life. It guarantees political freedom, human rights and self respect. It is a centre process of transformation and acquisition of capacity to live a better rewarding and fulfilling life. Humanly speaking, it is multi-facial in nature. It is an increased in knowledge, skill, capability, creativity, self-discipline, and responsibility that encourage material well-being (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

However, the achievement of any developmental goal is closely tied to the society at large. This is because, the achievement of individual freedom, responsibility, skill, etc. can only have real meaning through some interplays among the social elements. It complements one another efforts in achieving success or making progress.

Many respective social institutions or state political structures are keen to the actualisation of development. It is within these social rules that the social members interact, dialogue, trade, etc. successfully, and move forward. In other words, at certain level of social groups, development implies an increase in the capacity to regulate both the internal and external relationships (Rodney, 1972: 1-2). Development at times means an increase in the ability to guard or secure independence of a social group, or indeed, infringing the freedom of other environmental components irrespective of their will to survive. The very act of making tools was a stimulus to the increase in rationality rather than the consequence of a fully matured intellect.

Anthropologically, man the worker is important as man the thinker, because, working with the tools has liberated men from the sheer of physical stress, in such that, man can now impose himself upon other environmental components easily. Man has been multiplied enormously in his capacity to overcome and win a living for himself through the nature since the time immemorial. The magnitude of man's achievement is best understood by reflecting on his past. The progress from the crude stone tools to the use of metals, or the change-over from the hunting and gathering wild fruits to the domestication of animals and growing of food crops, and the improvement in organisation of work from an individual's activity towards activities of a social group signify one aspect of developments. The tools with which men work and the manner in which they organise their labour are both important indices of social development (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Rodney (1972:2) states that development in any society should be classified through two parameters, namely: political and socio-economical development. Political development is the advancement in governance, while socio-economic development includes advancements in economic and socio-cultural practices like technology, material well-being, per capital income generation, etc. The ability of a society to utilise opportunities abound in its environment determines its levels of development. Capacity or ability to deal with certain environment for development depends on the extent at which the society members can influence the law of the nature for their benefits. To put development in proper perspective, there has been a constant economic development within the social system since the origins of man. In modern day society, every country struggle to extend its controls over its environment, which can be deduced as development.

On several occasions, human groups have displayed an increase in capacity to extract a living from their environment. Development is a universal phenomenon, and a condition that leads to economic expansions. The overall tendency of development increases production, and at a given time, increases the quantity/quality of goods and services in the societies.

It associates with the changes in the quality of character of the social members. In other words, emphasis of the aspiring developing society should be on how to create a better living condition for its citizens and creates conducive atmosphere for growths and advancements. All these would create a condition for material and psychological welfare of the people. Many societies are blessed and endowed with vast human and natural resources that can make them developed nations. Ironically, with the opportunities abound, they still remain in the ranks and files of those nations that are underdeveloped. Poverty continues to spread at the alarming rates because of virtual stagnation in the growths of per capita income and their limited economic prospects. The extent of mass poverty remains unacceptable (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

More importantly, development, peace and security have mutual relationships that make them un-separable. Many socio-economic practices and political histories have been replete with cases of insecurity and underdevelopment that led to the stagnation of progress. The links between better institutional structures that guarantee public opinion, transparency and accountability, political stability, government effectiveness, regulatory burden, rule of law, graft and development are quiet obvious. The clear institutional structures predictably enforce reliable information, maintenance of infrastructure and basic services, elimination of inefficiency, etc. that promote growths and development. Inability to develop lies within their incompatibility of quest for self interest/survival, maintenance of existing obsolete facilities. The abnormality in social system makes development unrealistic. Development orientation that requires specialist knowledge and skills needs seriousness. The development plan involves long-term and shorter-term measures which must be proactive.

It is unquestionable fact that large proportions of underdeveloped countries are experiencing slow rate of development or total stagnation. Their rate of economic growth is lower than their population increase, and this has transformed their societies to abusive forms of social disorder. The scourge of insecurity constitutes impediment to their efforts to eradicate poverty and ensures sustainable development. Insecurity situation prevents investors to delve into developmental orientation programmes. Development could be achieved through sense of natural and human resources maximisation. The misuse of resources is directly or indirectly invoking curse and disproportionate their development processes. The underlying issues of poor development orientation and insecurity culminated into many societies' slow rate of development. For example, most of the development orientations have not been traditionally structured around the cultural background, available raw materials, or natural resources. The daily struggle for survival should not jettison grassroots development.

In the real sense of development, relationship within a social system determines its respective superstructures that brew progress and transformation. Development is a multiple-side of accomplishment that implies an increase in capacity to regulate both the internal and external mechanism of interactions. It is a continuous transformation in societies, which means, history of human race has been full of struggles to survival against imaging enemies, hazards and disasters. That is, development is an increase in the ability to guard independence of social group and infringement of ecosystem for social transformation. Ability of a society to embark on unique lines of development would distinguish its social functions -in terms of capacity to transform its ways of doing things, making and using sophisticated tools to earn a good living condition. The act of making tools is synonymous with the increase in rationality to develop rather than individual accumulations.

In some cases, the term development has been exclusively referred as economic sense of progress, that is, advancement in economy index for social values. Meaning, a society is developed when its members are increased in the capacity to deal with the environment for economic gains. But the capacity to deal with the environment depends on the extent at which the man understand the laws of the nature or the extent at which the man makes use of the understanding by devising coping mechanisms (technology), and the manner at which his work is organised. However, there has been constant economic development within the society, which has been varied base on the capacity to win a living from the nature. No society is static, although, the rates of transformation are different (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

On technology, the progress from the crude stone tools to the use of metals and the change-over from the hunting-gathering of wild fruits to the domestication of animals and growing of food crops, use of computer and improvement in organisation of work from individuals to social clustering, reflect the extent and progress human race has made. The capacity of a society to independently increase ability to live successfully by exploiting resources signifies its development. Likewise, a society that expands its socio-economic capacity beyond the growing of food items and produces a wide variety of other items such as wears, porcelain, ships and other scientific devices is developed. These of course represent a quantitative and qualitative increase in goods and services or materials production. The levels of specialisation in some societies ascertained their levels of advancement. This is because; specialisation and division of labour lead to better productivity abilities as well as opportunities to distribute resources fairly.

However, development should not be solely seen as economic advancement but overall social processes, which depend on the outcome of efforts made in dealing with the natural environment.

The change in economic bases with the change in other social superstructures involves spheres of ideology and social beliefs that ascertain level of development. Sometimes, quantitative change metamorphoses into qualitative change when there is mind of seriousness. Economically, each succeeding change represents development in its strict sense of increase in capacity to control resources of an environment, and thereby, provide more goods and services for society. The greater the inventive and incentive of human skills, the greater the quantity of goods and services produced. This is because, human being has capacity and sense to provide more opportunities to display and develop talents. Advance productivity increases the range of social power of control over others, which symbolises a social competition for survival and growth. In the history of man, opportunity is abound for quantitative change that could ultimately give rise to development. But development depends on technical capacity to deal with the environment and the peculiarities of superstructure in societies. For example, when two societies of different sorts are in-contacts, the rate and character of change taking place will seriously affect the extent of their new patterns of life. The weaker between the two societies would be adversely affected, and the wider the gaps between the two societies -in terms of transformation, the more the consequences (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Theoretically, environmental determinism theory was of the view that development is determined by environment. It regards locality and climate as major factors responsible for human behaviour and cultural differences. That is, every environment determines the types of culture or development obtains. The postulation of this theory is that environment makes certain cultural phenomenal possible, and likewise, places some stringent limitations upon the level of cultural development in some cases. It plays significant roles in the evolution of culture and development, which could account for why certain aspects of culture are possible or absent in some other geographical locations (Sowunmi, 2001:82). Hence, for society to be successful, there is need to take cognisance of environment, and knowing could be applicable to that environment. For instance, Eskimos in the arctic region develop their socio-cultural practices and needs around the reindeer animals that exist in their environment. They built their shelter, technology and fashion-out their clothing, feeding habit and development through reindeer animals.

Every culture has its own philosophical axioms, ethical norms and value systems created for survival, which can be deduced as culture invents its own mechanisms or moral norms for coping within environment and maintaining welfare and health in societies (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Albeit, there are two significant beliefs common to every culture that unite various societies, whatever their differences, the belief of communalism and supernaturalism is in deniable. These two beliefs are very important to development, because, they reveal the nature of relationship exists between the humans and their environment, which are potential sources of development. That is, communalism is the nature of human social structures. All individuals within a social system are interrelated and interdependent. Communalism in societies is a social arrangement where members see themselves as people pursuing similar goals and have inter-related interests, that is, an individual does not see himself/herself as outsider in the community. Members of the society share goods and values. They are intellectually and ideologically, as well as emotionally attach to the same goals and values.

In other words, transforming a society through endows cultural properties would enhance its development. Its social structures are very useful in its transformation and development. Some societies are underdeveloped because they neglect their internal mechanisms, and until they learn how to apply their internal mechanisms and prevent exploitation before they could attain development. More importantly, development can be categorised into two types, that is, scientific/technological and socio-cultural developments, which could be in short or long term plan.

1. Scientific/technological development is the advancement based on scientific and technological abilities to transform society. It spontaneously transforms people's ways of life either on health, education, shelter, clothing, feeding habit, transportation, communication, security, etc. to a greater height.

2. Socio-cultural development is the advancement on socio-cultural practices through internal instructive mechanisms, with or without any adoptions of external orientations or development paradigms. It similarly transforms people's ways of life in governance, institution, relationship, education, health, shelter, clothing, feeding habit, transportation, communication, etc.; and ensures peace, security, stability, and social order. It instills in people moral, norms, and values of their society. It passes on socio-cultural endow attributes from one generation to the others. It improves ways of doing things either scientifically, or technologically (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Underdevelopment

Underdevelopment is not an absolute absence of development. Every society undergoes one transformation or the other, no matter how little, which may be either at greater height or lesser extent. That is, there is no society that is static. Underdevelopment could only be meaningfully defined when the changes undergoing by a society is acknowledged and compared with other levels of transformation taking place elsewhere.

Development is strictly uneven defined when viewing through the narrow lenses of economic attainments. Meaning, some societies may be advancing in production of their needs and wealth than the others, but that does not mean others are not undergoing transformation or development. The moment a society appears to be wealthier than others, enquiry would be abounding to know how and why there are discrepancies or disparities in the levels of transformation. The rationality behinds underdevelopment concept could only be substantiated through a comparative analysis or comparism of some development variables. There are indicators (scientific/technological and socio-cultural advancement) that clarify societies as developed or underdeveloped, through them, one can possibly compare or determine whether a society is developed or not at a particular period (Adedoyin, 2015 and 2020).

Another indispensable component of underdevelopment is the level of relationship in terms of explorations of opportunities abound and exploitations of one group by the other. Many societies named underdeveloped today are exploited by the developed ones. The yardsticks of determining underdevelopment that pre-occupy nowadays development measures are products of capitalist states' ideas, imperialism, and colonial practices. Many societies are underdeveloped because they are restricted by western imperialistic campaigns. They are developing as an appendage of those that exploit them. Through exploitation, the resources that meant for the development of the less developed states were forcefully taken or deprived by the so called developed nations through colonialism and selfish mechanisms. The natural and human resources of the less developed nations are taking away by the strong nations, which means, exploitation is an integral part of underdevelopment. That is, if not economy advancement, many of the so called developed nations are also underdeveloped in terms of human relationships and interactions. They behaved barbarically in terms of exploitation and selfish interest, and cherished massive accumulations of wealth at the expense of other nations. They engage in oppressions in terms of racism, discrimination, and internal psychiatric disorder as parts of their social features. They interact at the savage and barbaric levels of human nature, or better still, they are still living in the savage or barbaric era of hatred and selfishness for primitive accumulations.

In other words, underdevelopment is not solely a non-existence of technological or economical advancement. It should not solely restrict to technological and economical backwardness. Exploitation of the less developed societies by the metropolitan societies accentuates slow rate of development in many societies. Therefore, to consider a level of development includes removal of gross injustice, inequalities and classes that are rampant in many societies today in terms of individual wealth at the expense of collective interests.

Entrenchment of equal opportunities across the cultural backgrounds means development. Development is advancement in liquidation of luxury of life in societies for better living. Every member of societies needs to be given equal opportunity and privilege, and no one should be unprivileged. Per capita income should not be solely used to determine any level of development. A nation is developed base on its internal mechanisms of making life better for its citizens and having good relationships, and not by solely industrial activities or per capita incomes. The rates at which the assets of a society are available to its citizens signify its levels of development. The social services provided by a country are of important to the well-being and happiness of its citizens. The extent at which the basic goods and social services are made available should be measured directly or indirectly by the life expectancy of people, frequency of deaths, amount of malnutrition, occurrence of diseases (which could be prevented) and their level of education. Development is important and required a removal of all obstacles to the equality of life, that is, obstacles such as: tyranny, cultural bigotry, exclusion and deprivation need to be removed. Ending the evils that undermine progress and constraint transformation is fundamental to the course of any development. Human development is concerned with the advanced richness of human life than the richness of economy that human beings live on (Sen, 1989 and Kukah, 2007)

4.0 CONCLUSION

Until the crushing burden of injustice, insecurity, and poor development plan is lifted, societies would not able to attain their maximum development and social well beings that are possible. Freedom from social crises, insecurity, poor develop plans, neglect of socio-cultural practices and wants must be sought together. The societies would only able attain development when all the necessary institutional structures of peace and security are functioning together. The need for institutional transformation that ensures peace and development in all spheres of life should be carried out and taken cognisance in the 21st century. All these are discussed in the unit.

5.0 SUMMARY

The overall capability of development at a given time is to increase the quantity and quality of material productions that can generate social well-being. The development orientation or process of societies should encompass both short and long-term plans and be adherent. The emphasis of all societies aspiring for development should not solely be on per capita income as yardsticks of development. Stable inter-relationship that ensures progress and transformation of society is an indicator of development focus. Without stability and security, no development goal can be achieved. All these are interrogated in this unit for better acquisitions of intellectual abilities for development.

6.0 TUTOR-MARKED ASSIGNMENT

1. Of what importance is Peace and Security to Development
2. Peace is Relative! Discuss the types of Peace in the Context of Global Crises.
3. What are the Developments and the Features in Society?
4. Discuss Underdevelopment in the Context of Developing Nations.
5. What the Indicators of Development and Underdevelopment in society?

7.0 REFERENCES/FURTHER READING

- Adebayo, A. (1986). *African Development: Alternative Development*. Ibadan: Spectrum Press. Pp4.
- Adedoyin, A. (2015 and 2020). *Peace, Security and Development Studies: Global System in Search of Social Stability and Improvement*. John Archers Publishers, Ibadan, Nigeria. First & Second Edition, Pp 1-520
- Adedoyin, A. (2010). "Governance and Peacebuilding in Post-Conflict Liberia". A Ph.D. Research Proposal in Peace and Conflict Studies Programme, Institute of African Studies, University of Ibadan, Nigeria.
- Anaan, K. (1998). The Causes of Conflict and Promotion of Durable Peace and sustainable Development in Africa. A/52?871-S/1998/318.
- Anderson, M and Woodrow, P. (1989). *Rising from the Ashes: Development Strategies in Times of Disaster*, Boulder CO: West-view Press.
- Annan, K. (1998). "The Causes of Conflict and the Promotion of Durable Peace and Sustainable Development in Africa", Report of the Secretary-General to the Security Council, S/1998/318, 13th April.
- Boutros-Ghali, B. (1992). *An Agenda for Peace*, New York: United Nations.
- Duffield, M. (1994). Complex Emergencies and the Crisis of Developmentalism. In Maxwell and Buchanan-Smith, M. (eds) (1994) *Linking Relief and Development*. Brighton: Institute of Development Studies. Vol. 25, No. 4.
- Jarret, A.B. (1996). *The Underdevelopment of Africa: Colonialism, Neo-Colonialism and Socialism* (Larham: University Press. P16.
- Kukah, M.H. (2007). *Religion, Culture and the Politics of Development*. Centre for Black and African Arts and Civilisation, Lagos.
- Mazrui, A. (1995). "Development in a Multicultural Context: trends and Tensions". A Paper Presented at a Conference Organised by the World Bank in Beijing China.

- Mpangala, A.P. (2004). Conflict and Post-conflict Situation in Africa, *Journal of Peace Studies*.
- Nwolise, O.B.C. (2004). Understanding Conflicts, Its Causes, Effects, Management and Resolution. A Paper Presented at a Workshop Organised By the Oyo State Youth Development Council, Ibadan.
- Ogomudia, A. (2007). Peace Support Operations, Command and Professionalism. Challenges for the Nigerian Armed Forces in the 21st Century and Beyond. Ibadan, Global Press Ltd, Nigeria.
- Rodney, W. (1972). *How Europe Underdeveloped Africa*; Abuja, Panaf Publishing, Inc. POWA Complex A.Y.A Asokoro.
- Seer, D. (1995). Introduction: A Review of Development Studies'. In Ayres, R. (ed). (1995) *Development Studies: An Introduction to Selected Reading*, Dartford: Greenwich University Press.
- Sen, A. (1989). *Development and Freedom*. New York: Anchor Books.
- Stiglitz, J.E. (2000). "Development Thinking at the Next Millennium". In Pleskovic and Stern, (eds.) *Annual World Bank Conference on Development Economic*. Washington, D.C; the World Bank.
- Todaro, M.P. (1999). *Economics for Developing World: An Introduction to Principles, Problems and Policies for Development*. London: Oxford University Press. Pp18.
- UNDP, (1995). *Public Sector Management, Governance and Sustainable Human Development*, New York, January.
- UNDP, (1996). *Report on the Workshop on Governance for Sustainable Human Development*, MDGD, New York, April
- UNDP, World Bank and Institute on Governance, Asian Development Bank, DAC-OECD, (1996). *Governance in Africa*.
- United Nations, (1998). *The Causes of Conflict and the Promotion of Durable Peace and Sustainable Development in Africa*. The Secretary General's Reports.
- University of Colorado, (2006). "Peacemaking": Conflict Research Consortium, International Online Training Programme on Intractable Conflict. Retrieved June 28, 2008.
http://www.ipacademy.org/publications/report/africa/publrepoafripp98p_rint.htm
- Wallenstein, P. (2008). *Strategic Peacebuilding; Issues and Actors*. Retrieved March 8, 2008 from http://kroc.nd.edu/ocpapers/op_28_1.pdf.